# Global Well-Posedness for a Nonlinear Wave Equation with p-Laplacian Damping 

Zahava Wilstein<br>University of Nebraska-Lincoln, s-zwilste1@math.unl.edu

Follow this and additional works at: http:// digitalcommons.unl.edu/mathstudent
Part of the Partial Differential Equations Commons, and the Science and Mathematics Education Commons

[^0]
# GLOBAL WELL-POSEDNESS FOR A NONLINEAR WAVE EQUATION WITH $P$-LAPLACIAN DAMPING 

by<br>Zahava Wilstein

## A DISSERTATION

Presented to the Faculty of The Graduate College at the University of Nebraska In Partial Fulfilment of Requirements For the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy

Major: Mathematics

Under the Supervision of Professor Mohammad A. Rammaha

Lincoln, Nebraska

May, 2011

# GLOBAL WELL-POSEDNESS FOR A NONLINEAR WAVE EQUATION WITH $P$-LAPLACIAN DAMPING 

Zahava Wilstein, Ph. D.

University of Nebraska, 2011

Adviser: Mohammad A.Rammaha

This dissertation deals with the global well-posedness of the nonlinear wave equation

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
u_{t t}-\Delta u-\Delta_{p} u_{t}=f(u) \quad \text { in } \Omega \times(0, T) \\
\left\{u(0), u_{t}(0)\right\}=\left\{u_{0}, u_{1}\right\} \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \times L^{2}(\Omega) \\
u=0 \text { on } \Gamma \times(0, T)
\end{array}\right.
$$

in a bounded domain $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$ with Dirichlét boundary conditions. The nonlinearities $f(u)$ acts as a strong source, which is allowed to have, in some cases, a super-supercritical exponent. Under suitable restrictions on the parameters and with careful analysis involving the theory of monotone operators, we prove the existence and uniqueness of local solutions. We also provide two types of restrictions on either the power of the source or the initial energy that give global existence of solutions. Finally, we give decay rates for the energy of the system for suitable initial data, with the proof of the decay and decay rates the focus of the talk.

## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I would first like to thank my advisor, Mohammad Rammaha, for dedicating immeasurable time and energy to my education and development as a mathematician and as a person. His guidance, advice and friendship have been invaluable and I have greatly enjoyed the time we have spent together. The Partial Differential Equations group at the University of Nebraska asked and answered countless questions of and for me. In particular, Daniel Toundykov provided considerable help and guidance and was instrumental in achieving some of the results of this dissertation. I would also like to thank my committee: Dr. Steve Cohn, Dr. Allan Peterson, Dr. David Pitts and Dr. Berthe Choueiry.

The faculty, staff and graduate students of the Mathematics Department at UNL were incredibly supportive of me during my schooling and made the last four years a wonderful time that I will always treasure. In particular, Michael Uhrig and Joe and Kayde Geisbauer became my family in Lincoln and helped me in more ways than I can ever list. I also thank the Mathematics Department at North Carolina State University for its support as I earned my masters degree and sparking my interest in differential equations.

Finally, I thank my loving family in Utah, New Zealand and California. They have always provided endless support and encouragement in all my endeavors-regardless of how nerdy they may be!

## GRANT INFORMATION

National Science Foundation Grant \# DMS-0838463

## Contents

Contents ..... v
1 Introduction ..... 1
1.1 Preliminaries ..... 4
1.1.1 Defining the Potential Well ..... 5
1.1.2 A Specific Product Rule in Banach Space ..... 9
1.1.3 Assumptions and Definition of Weak Solution ..... 16
1.2 Main Results ..... 17
2 Existence of Local Solutions ..... 21
2.1 Local Solutions ..... 21
2.1.1 Globally Lipschitz Sources ..... 23
2.1.2 Locally Lipschitz Sources ..... 32
2.1.3 More General Source Term ..... 36
2.1.4 The Approximated Problem ..... 42
2.1.5 Proper Proof of the Existence Statement in Theorem 1.2.1 ..... 48
2.2 Energy Identity ..... 51
3 Uniqueness of Weak Solutions ..... 54
3.1 Proof of Uniqueness ..... 54
4 Global Existence ..... 63
4.1 Damping Exponent Dominates Source ..... 63
4.1.1 Proof of First Global Existence Result ..... 63
4.1.2 Continuous Dependence on Initial Data ..... 68
4.2 Global Existence via the Potential Well ..... 72
5 Energy Decay ..... 77
5.1 Observability-Stability Estimate ..... 77
5.2 Comparable ODE ..... 93
5.3 Full Decay of ODE ..... 101
5.4 Decay Rate ..... 108
Bibliography ..... 112

## Chapter 1

## Introduction

This dissertation is concerned with the local and global well-posedness, as well as energy decay rates, of the following problem:

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
u_{t t}-\Delta u-\Delta_{p} u_{t}=f(u) \quad \text { in } \quad \Omega \times(0, T)  \tag{1.0.1}\\
\left\{u(0), u_{t}(0)\right\}=\left\{u_{0}, u_{1}\right\} \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \times L^{2}(\Omega) \\
u=0 \text { on } \Gamma \times(0, T)
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$ is a bounded open set with sufficiently smooth boundary $\Gamma$. Here, the p-Laplacian is given by:

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
-\Delta_{p}: W_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega) \longrightarrow W^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)  \tag{1.0.2}\\
\left\langle-\Delta_{p} v, \phi\right\rangle=\int_{\Omega}|\nabla v|^{p-2} \nabla v \cdot \nabla \phi d x, \quad 2 \leq p<\infty
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle$ denotes the duality paring between $\mathrm{W}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)$ and $\mathrm{W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega), \frac{1}{p}+\frac{1}{p^{\prime}}=1$. In addition, we assume that $f \in C^{1}(\mathbb{R})$ enjoys a general polynomial growth at infinity, namely, $|f(u)| \leq c|u|^{r}$ for all $|u| \geq 1$, where $1 \leq r<6$.

In order to simplify the exposition, we restrict our analysis to the physically more
relevant case when $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{3}$. Our results easily extend to bounded domains in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ by accounting for the corresponding Sobolev imbeddings and accordingly adjusting the conditions imposed on the parameters.

In view of the Sobolev imbedding $H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow L^{6}(\Omega)$ (in 3D), the Nemytski operator $f(u)$ is locally Lipschitz continuous from $H_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$ into $L^{2}(\Omega)$ for the values $1 \leq r \leq 3$. Hence, we call the exponents of the source $1 \leq r<3$ sub-critical and $r=3$ is critical. The values $3<r \leq 5$ are called supercritical, and in this case the operator $f(u)$ is not locally Lipschitz continuous from $H_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$ into $L^{2}(\Omega)$. However, for $3<r \leq 5$, the potential energy $\int_{\Omega} F(u(t)) d x$ induced by the source, where $F$ is the primitive of $f$, is well defined in the finite energy space. The values $5<r<6$ are called super-supercritical. In this case, the potential energy may not be defined in the finite energy space and the problem itself is no longer within the framework of potential well theory (see [3, 20, 22, 28, 30]).

In recent years, wave equations under the influence of nonlinear damping and nonlinear sources have generated considerable interest. However, the majority of the work that has been done deals with sources that are at most critical, where standard fixed point theorems and Galerkin approximations can be employed [1, 2, 3, 4, 14, $23,29,31]$. Indeed, few papers $[8,9,10]$ have dealt with supercritical sources. The authors of $[8,9,10]$ provided a comprehensive study for a semilinear wave equation under the influence of boundary/interior damping and nonlinear boundary/interior sources (where the interior damping term is of the order $\left|u_{t}\right|^{m-1} u_{t}, m \geq 1$ ). The main tool used in $[8,10]$ is the powerful theory of monotone operators [5, 27] in combination with important ideas from [12].

It is worth noting here that when the damping term $-\Delta_{p} u_{t}$ is absent, the source term of the form $|u|^{r-1} u$ should drive the solution of (1.0.1) to blow-up in finite time. In such a case, by appealing to a variety of methods (going back to the work of Glassey
[15], Levine [19], and others) one can show that most solutions to the problem blow up in finite time. In addition, if the source term $f(u)$ is removed from the equation, then damping terms of various forms should yield existence of global solutions (cf. [2, 4, 5, 16]). However, when both damping and source terms are present, then the analysis of their interaction and their influence on the global behavior of solutions becomes more difficult (see for instance $[7,14,20,23,25]$ and the references therein). We finally note here that, when $p=2$, the term $-\Delta u_{t}$ provides very strong dissipation. However, for $p>2$, this effect is diminished by the fact that such a damping is quasilinear and is, in some sense, degenerate. The case when $-\Delta_{p} u_{t}$ is replaced by $-\Delta u_{t}$ (when $\mathrm{p}=2$ ), has been studied by Webb [31], but only for the case of a good source $f(u)$ that is globally Lipschitz continuous from $H_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$ into $L^{2}(\Omega)$. Here, the source in (1.0.1) is allowed to be super-supercritical. As an additional complication, the degenerate nature of the p-Laplacian as an elliptic operator is known to cause serious difficulties, as one can see from the work of DiBenedetto [13]. Nonetheless, the problem is still monotonic and is treatable with the theory of monotone operators, at least for the case when $f: H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \longrightarrow L^{2}(\Omega)$ is globally Lipschitz.

In our work we are also able to provide a decay rate for the energy of the system, provided that the initial data lies in the good part of the potential well (see Section 1.1.1). When $p=2$, it is well-known that the energy decays exponentially (see Webb [31]), however the situation becomes much more difficult for $p>2$. We follow the method presented in [21] and further refined in $[3,11]$ and compare the energy of the system to a suitable ordinary differential equation. Difficulties arise in constructing an observability-stability inequality due to the lack of a uniform bound for $\|\nabla u(t)\|_{p}$. As a result, our estimate for $\|\nabla u(t)\|_{p}$ is growing in time (see (5.1.23)). This leads to a non-autonomous ODE (in contrast to the time-independent ODEs of $[3,11,21]$ ) and careful analysis is required to show both decay to zero and a
subsequent decay rate of the solution.

### 1.1 Preliminaries

We begin by introducing some basic notation that will be used in the subsequent discussion:

$$
\|u\|_{r}=\|u\|_{L^{r}(\Omega)} \quad \text { and } \quad(u, v)_{\Omega}=(u, v)_{L^{2}(\Omega)} .
$$

For duality pairing between $\mathrm{H}^{-1}(\Omega)$ and $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$ and between $\mathrm{W}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)$ and $\mathrm{W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$, we shall use the simple notation $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle$. Also, due to Poincaré's inequality, the standard norms $\|u\|_{H_{0}^{1}(\Omega)}$ and $\|u\|_{W_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)}$ are equivalent to the norms $\|\nabla u\|_{2}$ and $\|\nabla u\|_{p}$, respectvely. Hence, we put

$$
\|u\|_{\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)}=\|\nabla u\|_{2}, \quad \text { and } \quad\|u\|_{W_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)}=\|\nabla u\|_{p} .
$$

Also, the following Sobolev imbeddings (in $\mathbb{R}^{3}$ ) will used frequently, and sometimes without mention:

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
W_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow L^{\frac{3 p}{3-p}}(\Omega), \quad \text { for } 2 \leq p<3  \tag{1.1.1}\\
W_{0}^{1,3}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow L^{s}(\Omega), \quad \text { for } 1 \leq s<\infty \\
W_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow C_{B}^{0}(\Omega), \quad \text { for } p>3
\end{array}\right.
$$

In addition, the following parameter $q$ will be fixed throughout the disseration:

$$
q=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{3 p}{4 p-3}, \text { if } 2 \leq p<3  \tag{1.1.2}\\
1+\delta, \text { if } p=3 \\
1, \text { if } p>3
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\delta>0$ can be taken arbitrary small. In view of the imbeddings in (1.1.1) we always have

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow L^{q^{\prime}}(\Omega), \quad 2 \leq p<\infty \tag{1.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\frac{1}{q}+\frac{1}{q^{\prime}}=1$.

### 1.1.1 Defining the Potential Well

A powerful tool in the study of the global existence of solutions to partial differential equations is potential well theory, first developed by Payne and Sattinger [22]. The energy of a PDE system is, in some sense, split into kinetic and potential energy. By examining the functional $J$, defined below in (1.1.4), along scalings of functions in $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$ we discover that there is a valley or a "well" of height $d$ created in the potential energy. Because this height $d$ is strictly positive, we find that, for solutions with initial data in the "good part" of the well (see (1.1.21), the potential energy of the solution can never escape the well. In general, it is possible for the energy from the source term to cause the magnitude of the total energy to go to $-\infty$ in finite time (i.e., blow-up in finite time). However in the good part of the well it remains bounded by the quadratic potential energy, $\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}$, which is bounded in time. As a result, the total energy of the solution remains finite on any time interval $[0, T)$, providing the global existence of the solution.

We proceed by defining the functional $J: \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
J(u)=\frac{1}{2}\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{r+1}\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1} . \tag{1.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, we write the total energy of the system as

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(t)=\frac{1}{2}\left\|u_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}+J(u(t)) \tag{1.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

and write the positive quadratic energy as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{E}(t)=\frac{1}{2}\left\|u_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2} \tag{1.1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

The Gâteaux ${ }^{1}$ derivative, $J^{\prime}(u, v)$, of $J$ at $u$ in the direction $v$ is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
J^{\prime}(u, v) & :=\lim _{\epsilon \rightarrow 0} \frac{J(u+\epsilon v)-J(u)}{\epsilon}=\left.\frac{d}{d \epsilon} J(u+\epsilon v)\right|_{\epsilon=0} \\
& =\left.\frac{d}{d \epsilon}\left(\frac{1}{2}\|\nabla u+\epsilon \nabla v\|_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{r+1}\|u+\epsilon v\|_{r+1}^{r+1}\right)\right|_{\epsilon=0} \\
& =(\nabla u, \nabla v)-\left(|u|^{r-1} u, v\right) . \tag{1.1.7}
\end{align*}
$$

Now, the critical points of $J$ (the $u$ for which $J^{\prime}(u, v)=0$ for all smooth $v$ of compact support) are the weak solutions of the elliptic problem

$$
\begin{cases}-\Delta u=|u|^{r-1} u & \text { in } \Omega  \tag{1.1.8}\\ u=0 & \text { on } \partial \Omega\end{cases}
$$

We define the Nehari Manifold,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{N}:=\left\{u \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \backslash\{0\}:\left\langle J^{\prime}(u), u\right\rangle=0\right\} \tag{1.1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^1]where $J^{\prime}(u)$ is the Gâteaux derivative at $u$. Equivalently,
\[

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{N}=\left\{u \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \backslash\{0\}:\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}=\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1}\right\} . \tag{1.1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

\]

We define, as in the Mountain Pass Theorem,

$$
\begin{equation*}
d:=\inf _{u \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \backslash\{0\}} \sup _{\lambda \geq 0} J(\lambda u) . \tag{1.1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

We first show the following lemma.

Lemma 1.1.1. For $1<r \leq 5$ and $J$ as defined above, we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
d=\inf _{u \in \mathcal{N}} J(u) \tag{1.1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $d>0$.

Proof. The statement in (1.1.12) follows from a scaling argument. First, let $u \in$ $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \backslash\{0\}$ be fixed. Then, for any $\lambda \geq 0$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
J(\lambda u) & =\frac{1}{2}\|\lambda \nabla u\|_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{r+1}\|\lambda u\|_{r+1}^{r+1} \\
& =\frac{1}{2} \lambda^{2}\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{r+1} \lambda^{r+1}\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1} . \tag{1.1.13}
\end{align*}
$$

Taking the derivative of the right hand side of (1.1.13) with respect to $\lambda$ yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d \lambda} J(\lambda u)=\lambda\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}-\lambda^{r}\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1}=\lambda\left(\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}-\lambda^{r-1}\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1}\right) \tag{1.1.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

and so the critical values for $\lambda$ are $\lambda_{0}=0$ and $\lambda_{1}=\lambda_{1}(u)=\left(\frac{\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}}{\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1}}\right)^{\frac{1}{r-1}}$. Also,

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{d^{2}}{d \lambda^{2}} J(\lambda u)=\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}-r \lambda^{r-1}\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1} \\
\frac{d^{2}}{d \lambda^{2}} J\left(\lambda_{0} u\right) \geq 0 \quad \text { and } \quad \frac{d^{2}}{d \lambda^{2}} J\left(\lambda_{1} u\right) \leq 0 \tag{1.1.15}
\end{gather*}
$$

Hence, $\sup _{\lambda \geq 0} J(\lambda u)=J\left(\lambda_{1} u\right)$.
We now observe that $\lambda_{1} u \in \mathcal{N}$ because

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|\nabla\left(\lambda_{1} u\right)\right\|_{2}^{2} & =\left(\frac{\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}}{\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1}}\right)^{\frac{2}{r-1}}\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}=\left(\frac{\|\nabla u\|_{2}}{\|u\|_{r+1}}\right)^{\frac{2(r+1)}{r-1}} \\
& =\left(\frac{\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}}{\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1}}\right)^{\frac{r+1}{r-1}}\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1}=\left\|\lambda_{1} u\right\|_{r+1}^{r+1} \tag{1.1.16}
\end{align*}
$$

Also, for any $u \in \mathcal{N}$, note that $\lambda_{1}(u)=\left(\frac{\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}}{\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1}}\right)^{\frac{1}{r-1}}=1$ and so $\lambda_{1}(u) u=u$ for all $u \in \mathcal{N}$. Thus, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\inf _{u \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \backslash\{0\}} \sup _{\lambda \geq 0} J(\lambda u)=\inf _{u \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \backslash\{0\}} J\left(\lambda_{1}(u) u\right)=\inf _{u \in \mathcal{N}} J(u) \tag{1.1.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

and (1.1.12) is shown.
We now show $d>0$. From the Sobolev Imbedding (1.1.1), because $r+1 \leq 6$, for all $u \in \mathcal{N}$ we have,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}=\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1} \leq C\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{r+1} \tag{1.1.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

which, in turn, implies that $\|\nabla u\|_{2} \geq C^{\frac{-1}{r-1}}$. Thus, for all $u \in \mathcal{N}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
J(u)=\frac{1}{2}\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{r+1}\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1}=\frac{r-1}{2(r+1)}\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2} \geq \frac{r-1}{2(r+1)} C^{\frac{-2}{r-1}} \tag{1.1.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

and thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
d=\inf _{u \in \mathcal{N}} J(u) \geq \frac{r-1}{2(r+1)} C^{\frac{-2}{r-1}}>0 \tag{1.1.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

proving Lemma 1.1.1.

We now define the potential well $\mathcal{W}$ :

$$
\mathcal{W}:=\left\{u \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega): J(u)<d\right\}
$$

and partition it into the two sets:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathcal{W}_{1}:=\left\{u \in \mathcal{W}:\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}>\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1}\right\} \cup\{0\} \\
& \mathcal{W}_{2}:=\left\{u \in \mathcal{W}:\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}<\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1}\right\} . \tag{1.1.21}
\end{align*}
$$

We will refer to $\mathcal{W}_{1}$ as the "good" part of the well and $\mathcal{W}_{2}$ as the "bad" part of the well.

### 1.1.2 A Specific Product Rule in Banach Space

Symbolically, deriving an energy identity for a partial differential equation is as simple as testing the equation against the solution $u$ and integrating by parts. However, it is often the case that the solution does not have enough regularity to allow for this, or even for $u$ to be a test function in the variational formulation of the problem, and we must use a different line of analysis. This is the case with our wave equation (1.0.1) and so we next give a specific case of a product rule for derivatives of functions in Banach Spaces that allows us to provide the energy identity (1.2.1). Following
the presentation of [26], this product rule is shown in this subsection through two propositions, Proposition 1.1.2 and Proposition 1.1.3.

Let $X$ be a Banach space. For any $y \in C_{w}([0, T] ; X)^{2}$ and any $h>0$, define the symmetric difference quotient by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{h} y(t):=\frac{1}{2 h}\left(y_{e}(t+h)-y_{e}(t-h)\right) \tag{1.1.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
y_{e}(t)= \begin{cases}y(0), & \text { for } t \leq 0  \tag{1.1.23}\\ y(t), & \text { for } 0<t<T \\ y(T), & \text { for } t \geq T\end{cases}
$$

With this notation, we have the following technical results.

Proposition 1.1.2. Let $H$ be a Hilbert space and $X$ a Banach space with its dual $X^{*}$ such that $X \subset H \subset X^{*}$ where the injections are continuous and each space is dense in the following one. Assume that $f, g \in C([0, T], X), f^{\prime} \in L^{\beta^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right)$, $g^{\prime} \in L^{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right)$ where $1<\alpha^{\prime}, \beta^{\prime}<\infty$. Then, $\psi(t):=(f(t), g(t))$ coincides with an absolutely continuous function a.e. $[0, T]$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t}(f(t), g(t))=\left\langle f^{\prime}(t), g(t)\right\rangle+\left\langle f(t), g^{\prime}(t)\right\rangle \quad \text { a.e. }[0, T] \tag{1.1.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $(\cdot, \cdot)$ is the inner product in $H$ and $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle$ is the duality pairing between $X^{*}$ and $X$.

[^2]Proof. Extend $f$ and $g$ as in (1.1.23). Then, $f_{e}$ and $g_{e}$ are bounded and uniformly continuous from $\mathbb{R}$ into $X$. Let $\phi(t):=\left\langle f^{\prime}(t), g(t)\right\rangle+\left\langle f(t), g^{\prime}(t)\right\rangle$ and $\psi(t):=(f(t), g(t))$. It is well-known that

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{h} f \rightarrow f^{\prime} \in L^{\beta^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right) \quad \text { and } \quad D_{h} g \rightarrow g^{\prime} \in L^{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right) \tag{1.1.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us note here that

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{h} \psi(t)=\left(D_{h} f(t), g_{e}(t+h)\right)+\left(f_{e}(t-h), D_{h} g(t)\right) \tag{1.1.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

By elementary calculations, we see that

$$
\begin{align*}
D_{h} \psi(t)-\phi(t) & =\left\langle D_{h} f(t)-f^{\prime}(t), g_{e}(t+h)\right\rangle+\left\langle f^{\prime}(t), g_{e}(t+h)-g(t)\right\rangle \\
& +\left\langle f_{e}(t-h), D_{h} g(t)-g^{\prime}(t)\right\rangle+\left\langle f_{e}(t-h)-f(t), g^{\prime}(t)\right\rangle . \tag{1.1.27}
\end{align*}
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{T}\left|D_{h} \psi(t)-\phi(t)\right| d t & \leq \int_{0}^{T}\left\|D_{h} f(t)-f^{\prime}(t)\right\|_{X^{*}}\left\|g_{e}(t+h)\right\|_{X} d t \\
& +\int_{0}^{T}\left\|f^{\prime}(t)\right\|_{X^{*}}\left\|g_{e}(t+h)-g(t)\right\|_{X} d t \\
& +\int_{0}^{T}\left\|f_{e}(t-h)\right\|_{X}\left\|D_{h} g(t)-g^{\prime}(t)\right\|_{X^{*}} d t \\
& +\int_{0}^{T}\left\|f_{e}(t-h)-f(t)\right\|_{X}\left\|g^{\prime}(t)\right\|_{X^{*}} d t \tag{1.1.28}
\end{align*}
$$

By using Hölder's inequality with $\beta^{\prime}$ and $\beta=\frac{\beta^{\prime}}{\beta^{\prime}-1}$ on the first two terms and $\alpha^{\prime}$ and
$\alpha=\frac{\alpha^{\prime}}{\alpha^{\prime}-1}$ on the last two terms of (1.1.28), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{T}\left|D_{h} \psi(t)-\phi(t)\right| d t & \leq\left\|D_{h} f(t)-f^{\prime}(t)\right\|_{L^{\beta^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right)}\left\|g_{e}(t+h)\right\|_{L^{\beta}(0, T, X)} \\
& +\left\|f^{\prime}(t)\right\|_{L^{\beta^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right)}\left\|g_{e}(t+h)-g(t)\right\|_{L^{\beta}(0, T, X)} \\
& +\left\|f_{e}(t-h)\right\|_{L^{\alpha}(0, T, X)}\left\|D_{h} g(t)-g^{\prime}(t)\right\|_{L^{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right)} \\
& +\left\|f_{e}(t-h)-f(t)\right\|_{L^{\alpha}(0, T, X)}\left\|g^{\prime}(t)\right\|_{L^{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right)} \tag{1.1.29}
\end{align*}
$$

Since $f_{e}$ and $g_{e}$ are bounded from $\mathbb{R}$ into $X$, then $\left\|g_{e}(t+h)\right\|_{L^{\beta}(0, T, X)}$ and $\| f_{e}(t-$ $h) \|_{L^{\alpha}(0, T, X)}$ are uniformly bounded for all $h>0$. By (1.1.25) the first and third terms in (1.1.29) converge to 0 , as $h \rightarrow 0$. Also, $f_{e}$ and $g_{e}$ are in $C(\mathbb{R}, X)$, so $\left\|f_{e}(t-h)-f(t)\right\|_{X}^{\alpha}$ and $\left\|g_{e}(t+h)-g(t)\right\|_{X}^{\beta} \rightarrow 0$, as $h \rightarrow 0$, for all $0 \leq t \leq T$. Given that $f_{e}$ and $g_{e}$ are bounded from $\mathbb{R}$ into $X$, then by the Dominated Convergence Theorem $\left\|f_{e}(t-h)-f(t)\right\|_{L^{\alpha}(0, T, X)},\left\|g_{e}(t+h)-g(t)\right\|_{L^{\beta}(0, T, X)} \rightarrow 0$, as $h \rightarrow 0$. As $\left\|f^{\prime}(t)\right\|_{L^{\beta^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right)}, \quad\left\|g^{\prime}(t)\right\|_{L^{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right)}<\infty$, the second and fourth terms in (1.1.29) converge to 0 as $h \rightarrow 0$. Therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{h \rightarrow 0} \int_{0}^{T}\left|D_{h} \psi(t)-\phi(t)\right|=0 \tag{1.1.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us note that $\phi(t) \in L^{1}(0, T)$, because

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{T}|\phi(t)| d t & =\int_{0}^{T}\left|\left\langle f^{\prime}(t), g(t)\right\rangle+\left\langle f(t), g^{\prime}(t)\right\rangle\right| d t \\
& \leq \int_{0}^{T}\left|\left\langle f^{\prime}(t), g(t)\right\rangle\right| d t+\int_{0}^{T}\left|\left\langle f(t), g^{\prime}(t)\right\rangle\right| d t \\
& \leq\left\|f^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{\beta^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right)}\|g\|_{L^{\beta}(0, T, X)}+\left\|g^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right)}\|f\|_{L^{\alpha}(0, T, X)} \\
& <\infty \tag{1.1.31}
\end{align*}
$$

Combining, (1.1.30) and (1.1.31) we have that, $\frac{d}{d t} \psi \in L^{1}(0, T)$ and thus $\psi \in W^{1,1}(0, T, \mathbb{R})$. By a standard result, $\psi$ is a.e. equal to an absolutely continuous function and $\frac{d}{d t} \psi(t)=\left\langle f^{\prime}(t), g(t)\right\rangle+\left\langle f(t), g^{\prime}(t)\right\rangle$ a.e. $[0, T]$, which completes the proof.

We now relax the conditions on $f$ and $g$ in the following proposition.

Proposition 1.1.3. Let $X, H$ and $X^{*}$ be as in Proposition 1.1.2. Assume that $f \in$ $L^{\alpha}(0, T, X) \cap L^{2}(0, T, H), g \in L^{\beta}(0, T, X) \cap L^{2}(0, T, H), f^{\prime} \in L^{\beta^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right), g^{\prime} \in$ $L^{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right)$ where $1<\alpha, \beta<\infty, \alpha^{\prime}=\frac{\alpha}{\alpha-1}$ and $\beta^{\prime}=\frac{\beta}{\beta-1}$. Then $\psi(t):=(f(t), g(t))$ coincides with an absolutely continuous function a.e. $[0, T]$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t}(f(t), g(t))=\left\langle f^{\prime}(t), g(t)\right\rangle+\left\langle f(t), g^{\prime}(t)\right\rangle \quad \text { a.e. }[0, T] \tag{1.1.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Extend $f$ and $g$ to be zero outside of $[0, T]$ and regularize the extensions by mollifying with the sequence of functions $\left\{\sigma_{j}\right\} \in \mathcal{D}(\mathbb{R})$ such that $\sigma_{j} \geq 0, \int_{\mathbb{R}} \sigma_{j} d t=1$, $\sigma_{j}(t)=\sigma_{j}(-t)$ and $\operatorname{supp} \sigma_{j} \subset\left(-\frac{1}{j}, \frac{1}{j}\right)$. This gives the sequences of $C^{\infty}$-functions, $\left\{f_{j}\right\}$ and $\left\{g_{j}\right\}$ defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{j}(\tau)=\int_{\mathbb{R}} \sigma_{j}(\tau-s) f(s) d s \quad \text { and } \quad g_{j}(\tau)=\int_{\mathbb{R}} \sigma_{j}(\tau-s) g(s) d s \tag{1.1.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

We denote $\left.f_{j}\right|_{[0, T]}$ by $f_{j}$ and $\left.g_{j}\right|_{[0, T]}$ by $g_{j}$. It is well-known that

$$
\begin{cases}f_{j} \rightarrow f \text { in } L^{2}(0, T, H), & g_{j} \rightarrow g \text { in } L^{2}(0, T, H)  \tag{1.1.34}\\ f_{j} \rightarrow f \text { in } L^{\alpha}(0, T, X), & f_{j}^{\prime} \rightarrow f^{\prime} \text { in } L^{\beta^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right) \\ g_{j} \rightarrow g \text { in } L^{\beta}(0, T, X), & g_{j}^{\prime} \rightarrow g^{\prime} \text { in } L^{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right)\end{cases}
$$

We now show the following limits as $j \rightarrow \infty$ :

$$
\begin{cases}\left(f_{j}, g_{j}\right) \longrightarrow(f, g) & \text { in } L^{1}(0, T)  \tag{1.1.35}\\ \left\langle f_{j}^{\prime}, g_{j}\right\rangle \longrightarrow\left\langle f^{\prime}, g\right\rangle & \text { in } L^{1}(0, T) \\ \left\langle f_{j}, g_{j}^{\prime}\right\rangle \longrightarrow\left\langle f, g^{\prime}\right\rangle & \text { in } L^{1}(0, T)\end{cases}
$$

For the first convergence in (1.1.35) we have,

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{T} & \left|\left(f_{j}(t), g_{j}(t)\right)-(f(t), g(t))\right| d t \\
& \leq \int_{0}^{T}\left|\left(f_{j}(t), g_{j}(t)-g(t)\right)\right| d t+\int_{0}^{T}\left|\left(f_{j}(t)-f(t), g(t)\right)\right| d t \\
& \leq \int_{0}^{T}\left\|f_{j}(t)\right\|_{H}\left\|g_{j}(t)-g(t)\right\|_{H} d t+\int_{0}^{T}\left\|f_{j}(t)-f(t)\right\|_{H}\|g(t)\|_{H} d t \\
& \leq\left\|f_{j}\right\|_{L^{2}(0, T, H)}\left\|g_{j}-g\right\|_{L^{2}(0, T, H)}+\|g\|_{L^{2}(0, T, H)}\left\|f_{j}-f\right\|_{L^{2}(0, T, H)} \\
& \longrightarrow 0, \text { as } j \longrightarrow \infty \tag{1.1.36}
\end{align*}
$$

where we have used the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality and convergences in (1.1.34). As for the second convergence in (1.1.35), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{T} \mid & \left\langle f_{j}^{\prime}(t), g_{j}(t)\right\rangle-\left\langle f^{\prime}(t), g(t)\right\rangle \mid d t \\
& \leq \int_{0}^{T}\left\|f_{j}^{\prime}(t)\right\|_{X^{*}}\left\|g_{j}(t)-g(t)\right\|_{X} d t+\int_{0}^{T}\left\|f_{j}^{\prime}(t)-f^{\prime}(t)\right\|_{X^{*}}\|g(t)\|_{X} d t \\
& \leq\left\|f_{j}^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{\beta^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right)}\left\|g_{j}-g\right\|_{L^{\beta}(0, T, X)}+\left\|f_{j}^{\prime}-f^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{\beta^{\prime}}\left(0, T, X^{*}\right)}\|g\|_{L^{\beta}(0, T, X)} \\
& \longrightarrow 0, \text { as } j \longrightarrow \infty \tag{1.1.37}
\end{align*}
$$

A similar argument gives the third convergence in (1.1.35).
At this point, we note that $\left(f_{j}, g_{j}\right),\left\langle f_{j}^{\prime}, g_{j}\right\rangle$ and $\left\langle f_{j}, g_{j}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ are all elements of $L^{1}(0, T)$. Hence they define regular distributions in $\mathcal{D}^{\prime}(0, T)$. Thus, the convergences in (1.1.35)
hold in $\mathcal{D}^{\prime}(0, T)$ as well. In addition, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t}\left(f_{j}(t), g_{j}(t)\right) \longrightarrow \frac{d}{d t}(f(t), g(t)) \quad \text { in } \mathcal{D}^{\prime}(0, T), \text { as } j \longrightarrow \infty \tag{1.1.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

To see this fact, let $\phi \in \mathcal{D}(0, T)$. Recall that since $\left(f_{j}, g_{j}\right),(f, g) \in L^{1}(0, T)$, they define regular distributions. So, it follows from (1.1.35) that,

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\langle\frac{d}{d t}\left(f_{j}(t), g_{j}(t)\right), \phi\right\rangle & =-\int_{0}^{T}\left(f_{j}(t), g_{j}(t)\right) \phi^{\prime}(t) d t \\
& \longrightarrow-\int_{0}^{T}(f(t), g(t)) \phi^{\prime}(t) d t \\
& =\left\langle\frac{d}{d t}(f(t), g(t)), \phi\right\rangle \tag{1.1.39}
\end{align*}
$$

and (1.1.38) is shown. Now, because $f_{j}, g_{j}, f_{j}^{\prime}$ and $g_{j}^{\prime}$ satisfy Proposition 1.1.2, then for each $j \in \mathbb{N}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t}\left(f_{j}(t), g_{j}(t)\right)=\left\langle f_{j}^{\prime}(t), g_{j}(t)\right\rangle+\left\langle f_{j}(t), g_{j}^{\prime}(t)\right\rangle \quad \text { a.e. }[0, T] . \tag{1.1.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

By letting $j \longrightarrow \infty$ in (1.1.40) and using (1.1.39), (1.1.35), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t}(f(t), g(t))=\left\langle f^{\prime}(t), g(t)\right\rangle+\left\langle f(t), g^{\prime}(t)\right\rangle \quad \text { in } \mathcal{D}^{\prime}(0, T) \tag{1.1.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

Because the right-hand side of (1.1.41) is in $L^{1}(0, T)$, it follows that $(f(t), g(t))$ coincides with an absolutely continuous function on $[0, T]$. Moreover,

$$
\begin{equation*}
(f(t), g(t))-(f(0), g(0))=\int_{0}^{t}\left(\left\langle f^{\prime}(s), g(s)\right\rangle+\left\langle f(s), g^{\prime}(s)\right\rangle\right) d s \tag{1.1.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $t \in[0, T]$.

### 1.1.3 Assumptions and Definition of Weak Solution

Throughout the dissertation, we assume the validity of the following assumption.
Assumption 1.1.1. We assume that $2 \leq p<\infty$ and $f \in C^{1}(\mathbb{R})$ with the following growth conditions for $|u| \geq 1$ :

- $|f(u)| \leq c_{0}|u|^{r},\left|f^{\prime}(u)\right| \leq c_{1}|u|^{r-1}, 1 \leq r<6$, for some positive constants $c_{0}, c_{1}$.
- In addition, for the values $3<r<6$, we further require $f \in C^{2}(\mathbb{R})$ with the growth condition $\left|f^{\prime \prime}(u)\right| \leq c_{2}|u|^{r-2}$, for $|u| \geq 1$.
- Throughout, the exponent of the source satisfies:

$$
\begin{cases}1 \leq r<8-\frac{6}{p}, & \text { if } 2 \leq p<3  \tag{1.1.43}\\ 1 \leq r<6, & \text { if } p \geq 3\end{cases}
$$

- $u_{0} \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega), u_{1} \in L^{2}(\Omega)$.

At times we will also employ the following assumption.

Assumption 1.1.2. Assume that $E(0)<d$, where $d$ is the depth of the potential well (see (1.1.11)), and that $u_{0} \in \mathcal{W}_{1}$.

We now give a precise definition of weak solutions of (1.0.1).
Definition 1.1.4. A function $u$ is said to be a weak solution of (1.0.1) on $[0, T]$ if $u \in C\left([0, T], \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right), u_{t} \in C\left([0, T], L^{2}(\Omega)\right) \cap L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right),\left(u(0), u_{t}(0)\right)=\left(u_{0}, u_{1}\right)$ and, for all $0 \leq t \leq T, u$ satisfies

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(-u_{t} \phi_{t}+\nabla u \cdot \nabla \phi\right) d x d s & +\left.\int_{\Omega} u_{t} \phi\right|_{s=0} ^{s=t} d x+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla u_{t}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t} \cdot \nabla \phi d x d s \\
& =\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f(u) \phi d x d s \tag{1.1.44}
\end{align*}
$$

for all test functions $\phi \in H^{1}\left(0, T ; L^{2}(\Omega)\right) \cap L^{p}\left(0, T ; \mathrm{W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)$.

### 1.2 Main Results

Our first result establishes the existence and uniqueness of a weak solution of (1.0.1).
Theorem 1.2.1. (Local Solutions) Under the validity of Assumption 1.1.1, problem (1.0.1) has a local weak solution $u$ defined on $[0, T]$ (in the sense of Definition 1.1.4) for some $T>0$. Moreover, if we further assume that $u_{0} \in L^{\frac{3}{2}(r-1)}(\Omega)$, whenever $r>5$, then the said weak solution is unique. In addition, $u$ satisfies the following energy identity:

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(t)+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s=E(0) \tag{1.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $t \in[0, T]$, where $E(t)$ denotes the total energy of the system

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(t):=\frac{1}{2}\left\|u_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}-\int_{\Omega} F(u(t)) d x \tag{1.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $F(u)=\int_{0}^{u} f(s) d s$.
Remark 1.2.1. Clearly, the energy identity (1.2.1) shows dissipation of energy in the system.

Our next result shows that the weak solution furnished by Theorem 1.2.1 is a global solution provided the exponent of damping is more dominant than the exponent of the source. More precisely, we have the following theorem.

Theorem 1.2.2. (Global Solutions) In addition to Assumption 1.1.1, assume that $r \leq p-1$ and $u_{0} \in L^{r+1}(\Omega)$, if $r>5$. Then, the said weak solution $u$ in Theorem 1.2.1 is a global solution and $T$ can be taken arbitrarily large.

Remark 1.2.2. Notice that for $r \leq 5$ the condition that $u_{0} \in L^{r+1}(\Omega)$ in Theorem 1.2.2 is not an additional restriction, due to the imbedding $H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow L^{6}(\Omega)$.

Corollary 1.2.3. (Continuous Dependence on Initial Data) Under the validity of Assumption 1.1.1, then the weak solution of (1.0.1) depends continuously on the initial data. More precisely, let $\left(u_{0}, u_{1}\right) \in H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \times L^{2}(\Omega)$, if $1 \leq r \leq 5$, or $\left(u_{0}, u_{1}\right) \in H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \cap L^{k}(\Omega) \times L^{2}(\Omega)$, if $r>5$, where $k=\frac{3}{2}(r-1)$. Further, let $\left\{\left(u_{0}^{n}, u_{1}^{n}\right)\right\}$ be a sequence of initial data such that, as $n \rightarrow \infty$,

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\left(u_{0}^{n}, u_{1}^{n}\right) \longrightarrow\left(u_{0}, u_{1}\right) \text { in } H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \times L^{2}(\Omega), \text { if } 1 \leq r \leq 5,  \tag{1.2.3}\\
\left(u_{0}^{n}, u_{1}^{n}\right) \longrightarrow\left(u_{0}, u_{1}\right) \text { in } H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \cap L^{k}(\Omega) \times L^{2}(\Omega), \text { if } r>5 .
\end{array}\right.
$$

Then, the corresponding solutions $u^{n}$ and $u$ of (1.0.1) satisfy:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(u^{n}, u_{t}^{n}\right) \longrightarrow\left(u, u_{t}\right) \text { in } C\left([0, T], H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \times L^{2}(\Omega)\right) \text {, as } n \rightarrow \infty . \tag{1.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us note here that the allowable range of the parameters is as shown in Figure 1.1 below.

We next provide different criteria for the global existence of solutions via potential well theory. Here, we may allow for a much higher exponent on the source $(1<r \leq 5)$ by restricting the size of the initial data. Note that, in contrast to Theorem 1.2.2, the allowable values of $r$ do not depend on the value of $p$.

Theorem 1.2.4. (Global Solutions in the Potential Well) In addition to Assumption 1.1.1, assume that $u_{0} \in \mathcal{W}_{1}, E(0)<d, 1<r \leq 5$ and $f(u)=|u|^{r-1} u$. Then, the unique weak solution $u$ provided by Theorem 1.2.1 can be extended to $[0, \infty)$.


Figure 1.1: Local solutions in the grey and black regions. Global solutions in the grey region.

Furthermore, for all $t \in[0, T), u(t)$ remains in $\mathcal{W}_{1}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{E}(t) \leq d\left(\frac{r+1}{r-1}\right) \tag{1.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{1}(t) \leq d\left(\frac{r+3}{r-1}\right) \tag{1.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark 1.2.3. The source $f(u)$ is chosen as $|u|^{r-1} u$ in Theorem 1.2 .4 to clarify the exposition, however the result can be shown for a more general source $f(u)$ satisfying the assumptions.

A final theorem provides a decay rate for the global solution provided by Theorem 1.2.4.

Theorem 1.2.5. (Decay of Global Solutions in the Potential Well) Let (1.0.1) satisfy the hypothesis of Theorem 1.2.4, $u_{0} \in W_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$ and let $u$ be the unique
global solution with total energy $E(t)$ as in (1.2.2). Then,

$$
\begin{equation*}
0 \leq E(t) \leq \frac{C_{1}}{\left(\ln \left(C_{2} t\right)\right)^{p-1}}, \quad t \geq T_{0} \tag{1.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $T_{0}$ is chosen in the proof.

## Chapter 2

## Existence of Local Solutions

### 2.1 Local Solutions

This chapter is devoted to the proof of the local existence statement in Theorem 1.2.1, which will be carried out in five subsections. At this point, some comments are in order regarding the local solvability of (1.0.1). It is important to point out that nonlinear semi-groups and Kato's Theorem [6, 27] can only accommodate a globally Lipschitz perturbation of a monotone problem. Thus, moving from globally Lipschitz sources to the full generality of super-supercritical sources requires a great effort. Our strategy in handling this major problem is summarized as follows:

Step 1: For a globally Lipschitz source from $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$ into $L^{2}(\Omega)$, construct global solutions using nonlinear semigroup theory (Lemma 2.1.1).

Step 2: Extend the existence result in Step 1 to obtain local existence in the case of sources that are locally Lipschitz from $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$ into $L^{2}(\Omega)$. In the process, derive a priori bounds that do not depend on the locally Lipschitz constant of the source
as a mapping from $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$ into $L^{2}(\Omega)$, but rather on the locally Lipschitz constant of the source as a mapping from $\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)$ into $L^{q}(\Omega)$, where $q$ is given in (1.1.2). In particular, show that the local existence time, $T$, is independent of the properties required in Step 1 (Lemma 2.1.2).

Step 3: Construct approximations of the original source that obey the requirements in Step 2. This step is accomplished by using a certain truncation of the source, which was employed in [24]. Finally, pass to the limit on the weak variational form to obtain a local weak solution. Handling the corresponding approximations of the damping and sources is a major technical step due to the lack of compactness. Here, special estimates involving the so-called dissipativity kernels, which were introduced in [12], play a critical role. Another important ingredient in this process is the availability of an energy identity. This strategy allows us to pass to the limit without the use of compactness (Section 2.1.3-Section 2.1.5).

We proceed by beginning with some notation. Throughout the dissertation, we let

$$
H:=\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \times L^{2}(\Omega)
$$

with the usual inner product, i.e., if $X_{1}=\left(y_{1}, z_{1}\right), X_{2}=\left(y_{2}, z_{2}\right) \in H$, then

$$
\left(X_{1}, X_{2}\right)_{H}=\left(\nabla y_{1}, \nabla y_{2}\right)_{\Omega}+\left(z_{1}, z_{2}\right)_{\Omega}
$$

We also define the nonlinear operator $\mathscr{A}$ by:

$$
\mathscr{A}\binom{y}{z}^{t r}=\binom{-z}{-\Delta y-\Delta_{p} z-f(y)}^{t r}
$$

with $\mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A})=\left\{(y, z) \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \times \mathrm{W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega):-\Delta y-\Delta_{p} z-f(y) \in L^{2}(\Omega)\right\}$. It is clear
that $\mathscr{A}: \mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A}) \subseteq H \rightarrow H$.
Our first goal is to show that if $(u, v) \in W^{1, \infty}(0, T, H)$ is a solution to the Cauchy problem

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{d}{d t}\binom{u}{v}^{t r}+\mathscr{A}\binom{u}{v}^{t r}=0, \quad \text { a.e. } t \in[0, T]  \tag{2.1.1}\\
(u, v)(0)=\left(u_{0}, v_{0}\right) \in \mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A})
\end{array}\right.
$$

then $u$ is a weak solution to (1.0.1) on $[0, T]$ in the case when $\left(u_{0}, v_{0}\right) \in \mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A})$.

### 2.1.1 Globally Lipschitz Sources

Our first step toward proving Theorem 1.2.1 is to prove Lemma 2.1.1 below, which deals with the case of a globally Lipschitz source.

Lemma 2.1.1. Suppose that $f: H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{2}(\Omega)$ is globally Lipschitz continuous and $\left(u_{0}, v_{0}\right) \in \mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A})$. Then Problem (2.1.1) has a unique global solution $(u, v) \in$ $W^{1, \infty}(0, T, H),(u(t), v(t)) \in \mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A})$ a.e. $[0, T]$, where $T>0$ is arbitrary.

Remark 2.1.1. Indeed, Lemma 2.1.1 asserts that Problem (1.0.1) has a unique global solution provided $f: \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{2}(\Omega)$ is globally Lipschitz continuous and $\left(u_{0}, v_{0}\right) \in$ $\mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A})$. More precisely, Lemma 2.1.1 provides the existence of a unique function $u$ such that, $u \in C^{0}\left([0, T], \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right), u_{t} \in C^{0}\left([0, T], L^{2}(\Omega)\right), u_{t t} \in L^{\infty}\left(0, T, L^{2}(\Omega)\right)$, $v(t)=u_{t}(t) \in \mathrm{W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$, a.e. $t \in[0, T]$, and $u$ satisfies:

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
u_{t t}=\Delta u+\Delta_{p} u_{t}+f(u) \in L^{2}(\Omega), \text { a.e. }[0, T]  \tag{2.1.2}\\
(u(0), v(0))=\left(u_{0}, v_{0}\right) \in \mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A}),
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $T>0$ can be taken arbitrarily large.

Proof. The conclusions of Lemma 2.1.1 follow from Kato's Theorem (e.g., [27]). Thus, it suffices to show that the operator $\mathscr{A}+\omega I$ is $m$-accretive for some $\omega>0$.

Step 1: $\mathscr{A}+\omega I$ is accretive for some $\omega>0$. By assumption, there exists a constant $L_{f}>0$ such that $\left\|f\left(y_{1}\right)-f\left(y_{2}\right)\right\|_{2} \leq L_{f}\left\|\nabla\left(y_{1}-y_{2}\right)\right\|_{2}$, for all $y_{1}, y_{2} \in$ $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$. Let $X_{1}, X_{2} \in \mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A})$ with $X_{i}=\left(y_{i}, z_{i}\right), i=1,2$. We aim to show that $\left((\mathscr{A}+\omega I) X_{1}-(\mathscr{A}+\omega I) X_{2}, X_{1}-X_{2}\right)_{H} \geq 0$ for some $\omega>0$. By straightforward calculations, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
((\mathscr{A}+\omega I) & \left.X_{1}-(\mathscr{A}+\omega I) X_{2}, X_{1}-X_{2}\right)_{H} \\
& =\left(\mathscr{A}\left(X_{1}\right)-A\left(X_{2}\right), X_{1}-X_{2}\right)_{H}+\omega\left\|X_{1}-X_{2}\right\|_{H}^{2} \\
= & \left(-z_{1}+z_{2}, y_{1}-y_{2}\right)_{\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)}-\left(f\left(y_{1}\right)-f\left(y_{2}\right), z_{1}-z_{2}\right)_{\Omega} \\
& \left(-\Delta y_{1}-\Delta_{p} z_{1}+\Delta y_{2}+\Delta_{p} z_{2}, z_{1}-z_{2}\right)_{\Omega}+\omega\left\|X_{1}-X_{2}\right\|_{H}^{2} . \tag{2.1.3}
\end{align*}
$$

Given that $f$ is globally Lipschitz, the second term in (2.1.3) is estimated as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(f\left(y_{1}\right)-f\left(y_{2}\right), z_{1}-z_{2}\right)_{\Omega} & \leq\left\|f\left(y_{1}\right)-f\left(y_{2}\right)\right\|_{2}\left\|z_{1}-z_{2}\right\|_{2} \\
& \leq L_{f}\left\|\nabla\left(y_{1}-y_{2}\right)\right\|_{2}\left\|z_{1}-z_{2}\right\|_{2} \tag{2.1.4}
\end{align*}
$$

By noting that $\Delta y_{i}+\Delta_{p} z_{i} \in L^{2}(\Omega)$ for $i=1,2$, as implied by the definition of
$\mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A})$, the third term in (2.1.3) becomes

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(-\Delta y_{1}-\Delta_{p} z_{1}+\Delta y_{2}+\Delta_{p} z_{2}, z_{1}-z_{2}\right)_{\Omega} \\
& \quad=\left\langle-\Delta\left(y_{1}-y_{2}\right), z_{1}-z_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle-\left(\Delta_{p} z_{1}-\Delta_{p} z_{2}\right), z_{1}-z_{2}\right\rangle \\
& \quad=\left(\nabla\left(y_{1}-y_{2}\right), \nabla\left(z_{1}-z_{2}\right)\right)_{\Omega} \\
& \quad+\int_{\Omega}\left(\left|\nabla z_{1}\right|^{p}+\left|\nabla z_{2}\right|^{p}-\left|\nabla z_{1}\right|^{p-2} \nabla z_{1} \cdot \nabla z_{2}-\left|\nabla z_{2}\right|^{p-2} \nabla z_{2} \cdot \nabla z_{1}\right) d x \tag{2.1.5}
\end{align*}
$$

Recalling that $z_{1}, z_{2} \in \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$, it follows from Hölder's inequality that

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{\Omega}\left(\left|\nabla z_{1}\right|^{p}\right. & \left.+\left|\nabla z_{2}\right|^{p}-\left|\nabla z_{1}\right|^{p-2} \nabla z_{1} \cdot \nabla z_{2}-\left|\nabla z_{2}\right|^{p-2} \nabla z_{2} \cdot \nabla z_{1}\right) d x \\
& \geq\left\|\nabla z_{1}\right\|_{p}^{p}+\left\|\nabla z_{2}\right\|_{p}^{p}-\left\|\nabla z_{1}\right\|_{p}^{p-1}\left\|\nabla z_{2}\right\|_{p}-\left\|\nabla z_{2}\right\|_{p}^{p-1}\left\|\nabla z_{1}\right\|_{p} \\
& =\left(\left\|\nabla z_{1}\right\|_{p}^{p-1}-\left\|\nabla z_{2}\right\|_{p}^{p-1}\right)\left(\left\|\nabla z_{1}\right\|_{p}-\left\|\nabla z_{2}\right\|_{p}\right) \geq 0 \tag{2.1.6}
\end{align*}
$$

Therefore, from (2.1.3)-(2.1.4) and Young's inequality we have

$$
\begin{align*}
((\mathscr{A} & \left.+\omega I) X_{1}-(\mathscr{A}+\omega I) X_{2}, X_{1}-X_{2}\right)_{H} \\
& \geq-\left(\nabla\left(z_{1}-z_{2}\right), \nabla\left(y_{1}-y_{2}\right)\right)_{\Omega}+\left(\nabla\left(z_{1}-z_{2}\right), \nabla\left(y_{1}-y_{2}\right)\right)_{\Omega} \\
& -L_{f}\left\|\nabla\left(y_{1}-y_{2}\right)\right\|_{2}\left\|z_{1}-z_{2}\right\|_{2}+\omega\left\|X_{1}-X_{2}\right\|_{H}^{2} \\
& =\left(\omega-\frac{L_{f}}{2}\right)\left[\left\|\nabla\left(y_{1}-y_{2}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\left\|z_{1}-z_{2}\right\|_{L^{2}(\Omega)}^{2}\right] \geq 0, \tag{2.1.7}
\end{align*}
$$

whenever $\omega \geq \frac{L_{f}}{2}$. Thus, for such $\omega, \mathscr{A}+\omega I$ is accretive.

Step 2: $\mathscr{A}+\omega I$ is m-accretive. It suffices to show that $\mathcal{R}(\mathscr{A}+\omega I+\lambda I)=$ $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \times L^{2}(\Omega)$ for some $\lambda>0$. Rename $\omega+\lambda$ as $\lambda$ and let $(a, b) \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \times L^{2}(\Omega)$ be
given. We now find $(y, z) \in \mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A})$ such that

$$
(\mathscr{A}+\lambda I)\binom{y}{z}^{t r}=\binom{a}{b}^{t r}
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
\binom{-z+\lambda y}{-\Delta y-\Delta_{p} z-f(y)+\lambda z}^{t r}=\binom{a}{b}^{t r} \tag{2.1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, it must be that $y=\frac{a+z}{\lambda}$ and

$$
-\Delta\left(\frac{a+z}{\lambda}\right)-\Delta_{p} z-f\left(\frac{a+z}{\lambda}\right)+\lambda z=b
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\frac{1}{\lambda} \Delta z-\Delta_{p} z-f\left(\frac{a+z}{\lambda}\right)+\lambda z=b+\frac{1}{\lambda} \Delta a=: \tilde{b} . \tag{2.1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us note that because $a \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$ and $b \in L^{2}(\Omega)$, then $\tilde{b}:=b+\frac{1}{\lambda} \Delta a \in H^{-1}(\Omega) \subset$ $W_{0}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)$. Therefore, if we define an operator $T: \mathrm{W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega) \rightarrow W_{0}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
T(z):=-\frac{1}{\lambda} \Delta z-\Delta_{p} z-f\left(\frac{a+z}{\lambda}\right)+\lambda z, \tag{2.1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

then (2.1.9) holds for some $z \in \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$ if we can show that $T$ is surjective. In order to show that $T: \mathrm{W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega) \rightarrow W_{0}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)$ is surjective, it suffices to show that $T$ is maximal monotone and coercive.

Show $T$ is monotone for some $\lambda>0$ : Let $z_{1}, z_{2} \in \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$. Then, straightforward
computation shows that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\langle T\left(z_{1}\right)-T\left(z_{2}\right), z_{1}-z_{2}\right\rangle \\
& \quad=\lambda\left\|z_{1}-z_{2}\right\|_{2}^{2}-\int_{\Omega}\left(f\left(\frac{a+z_{1}}{\lambda}\right)-f\left(\frac{a+z_{2}}{\lambda}\right)\right)\left(z_{1}-z_{2}\right) d x \\
& \quad+\frac{1}{\lambda}\left\|\nabla\left(z_{1}-z_{2}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2}-\left\langle\Delta_{p} z_{1}-\Delta_{p} z_{2}, z_{1}-z_{2}\right\rangle . \tag{2.1.11}
\end{align*}
$$

Employing the fact that $f$ is globally Lipschitz from $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$ into $L^{2}(\Omega)$ and $\frac{a+z_{i}}{\lambda} \in$ $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega), i=1,2$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\langle T\left(z_{1}\right)-T\left(z_{2}\right), z_{1}-z_{2}\right\rangle & \geq \lambda\left\|z_{1}-z_{2}\right\|_{2}^{2}-\frac{L_{f}}{\lambda}\left\|\nabla\left(z_{1}-z_{2}\right)\right\|_{2}\left\|z_{1}-z_{2}\right\|_{2} \\
& +\frac{1}{\lambda}\left\|\nabla\left(z_{1}-z_{2}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2}-\left\langle\Delta_{p} z_{1}-\Delta_{p} z_{2}, z_{1}-z_{2}\right\rangle \tag{2.1.12}
\end{align*}
$$

By the same calculation as in (2.1.5)-(2.1.6), the last term in (2.1.12) is nonnegative. Using Young's inequality, we find

$$
\left\langle T\left(z_{1}\right)-T\left(z_{2}\right), z_{1}-z_{2}\right\rangle \geq\left(\lambda-\frac{L_{f}^{2}}{2 \lambda}\right)\left\|z_{1}-z_{2}\right\|_{2}^{2}+\frac{1}{2 \lambda}\left\|\nabla\left(z_{1}-z_{2}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2} \geq 0
$$

provided $\lambda \geq \frac{L_{f}}{\sqrt{2}}$. Thus, $T$ is monotone for such values of $\lambda$.
In order to show the maximality of $T$, it suffices to show that $T$ is hemicontinuous.

Show $T$ is hemicontinuous: We need to prove that $\mathrm{w}-\lim _{\mu \rightarrow 0} T\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right)=T\left(z_{1}\right)$ for every $z_{1}, z_{2} \in \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$. To see this, let $\xi \in \mathrm{W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$, then

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\langle T\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right), \xi\right\rangle & =-\frac{1}{\lambda}\left\langle\Delta\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right), \xi\right\rangle-\left\langle\Delta_{p}\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right), \xi\right\rangle \\
& -\left\langle f\left(\frac{a+z_{1}+\mu z_{2}}{\lambda}\right), \xi\right\rangle+\lambda\left\langle z_{1}+\mu z_{2}, \xi\right\rangle \tag{2.1.13}
\end{align*}
$$

Since $z_{2}, \Delta z_{2} \in \mathrm{~W}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)$, then for the first and fourth terms in (2.1.13) we easily have

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\frac{1}{\lambda}\left\langle\Delta\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right), \xi\right\rangle=-\frac{1}{\lambda}\left(\left\langle\Delta z_{1}, \xi\right\rangle+\mu\left\langle\Delta z_{2}, \xi\right\rangle\right) \longrightarrow-\frac{1}{\lambda}\left\langle\Delta z_{1}, \xi\right\rangle \tag{2.1.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda\left\langle z_{1}+\mu z_{2}, \xi\right\rangle \longrightarrow \lambda\left\langle z_{1}, \xi\right\rangle, \text { as } \mu \rightarrow 0 \tag{2.1.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

For the second term in (2.1.13) we utilize the Dominated Convergence Theorem. We first note that,

$$
-\left\langle\Delta_{p}\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right), \xi\right\rangle=\int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right)\right|^{p-2} \nabla\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right) \cdot \nabla \xi d x
$$

Clearly,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{\mu \rightarrow 0}\left|\nabla\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right)\right|^{p-2} \nabla\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right) \cdot \nabla \xi=\left|\nabla z_{1}\right|^{p-2} \nabla z_{1} \cdot \nabla \xi \quad \text { a.e. } \Omega \tag{2.1.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

and for $|\mu|<1$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\left|\nabla\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right)\right|^{p-2} \nabla\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right) \cdot \nabla \xi\right| \leq 2^{p-2}\left(\left|\nabla z_{1}\right|^{p-1}+\left|\nabla z_{2}\right|^{p-1}\right)|\nabla \xi| . \tag{2.1.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

In addition, $\left|\nabla z_{i}\right|^{p-1}|\nabla \xi| \in L^{1}(\Omega), i=1,2$, because

$$
\int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla z_{i}\right|^{p-1}|\nabla \xi| d x \leq\left\|\nabla z_{i}\right\|_{p}^{p-1}\|\nabla \xi\|_{p}<\infty .
$$

Therefore, by the Dominated Convergence Theorem, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
-\lim _{\mu \rightarrow 0}\left\langle\Delta_{p}\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right), \xi\right\rangle & =\lim _{\mu \rightarrow 0} \int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right)\right|^{p-2} \nabla\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right) \cdot \nabla \xi d x \\
& =\int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla z_{1}\right|^{p-2} \nabla z_{1} \cdot \nabla \xi d x=-\left\langle\Delta_{p} z_{1}, \xi\right\rangle \tag{2.1.18}
\end{align*}
$$

Finally, for the third term in (2.1.13) we shall show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{\mu \rightarrow 0}\left\langle f\left(\frac{a+z_{1}+\mu z_{2}}{\lambda}\right), \xi\right\rangle=\left\langle f\left(\frac{a+z_{1}}{\lambda}\right), \xi\right\rangle . \tag{2.1.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

To see this, we note that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|\left\langle f\left(\frac{a+z_{1}+\mu z_{2}}{\lambda}\right)-f\left(\frac{a+z_{1}}{\lambda}\right), \xi\right\rangle\right| \\
& \quad \leq\left\|f\left(\frac{a+z_{1}+\mu z_{2}}{\lambda}\right)-f\left(\frac{a+z_{1}}{\lambda}\right)\right\|_{2}\|\xi\|_{2} \\
& \quad \leq|\mu| \frac{L_{f}}{\lambda}\left\|\nabla z_{2}\right\|_{2}\|\xi\|_{2} \longrightarrow 0, \quad \text { as } \mu \rightarrow 0 \tag{2.1.20}
\end{align*}
$$

Hence, (2.1.19) follows. Combining (2.1.14)-(2.1.15) and (2.1.18)-(2.1.19), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\lim _{\mu \rightarrow 0}\left\langle T\left(z_{1}+\mu z_{2}\right), \xi\right\rangle & =-\frac{1}{\lambda}\left\langle\Delta z_{1}, \xi\right\rangle-\left\langle\Delta_{p} z_{1}, \xi\right\rangle-\left\langle f\left(\frac{a+z_{1}}{\lambda}\right), \xi\right\rangle \\
& +\lambda\left\langle z_{1}, \xi\right\rangle=\left\langle T\left(z_{1}\right), \xi\right\rangle \tag{2.1.21}
\end{align*}
$$

and thus, $T$ is hemicontinuous. Because $T$ is monotone and hemicontinuous, then by Theorem 1.3 in [5], we conclude that $T$ is maximal monotone.

Show $T$ is coercive for some $\lambda>0$ : We now need to show that

$$
\frac{1}{\|\nabla z\|_{p}}\langle T(z), z\rangle \rightarrow \infty, \quad \text { as }\|\nabla z\|_{p} \rightarrow \infty
$$

For $z \in \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$ we have,

$$
\begin{align*}
\langle T(z), z\rangle & =\left\langle-\frac{1}{\lambda} \Delta z-\Delta_{p} z-f\left(\frac{a+z}{\lambda}\right)+\lambda z, z\right\rangle \\
& =\frac{1}{\lambda} \int_{\Omega}|\nabla z|^{2} d x+\int_{\Omega}|\nabla z|^{p-2} \nabla z \cdot \nabla z d x-\int_{\Omega} f\left(\frac{a+z}{\lambda}\right) z d x+\lambda\|z\|_{2}^{2} \\
& \geq \frac{1}{\lambda}\|\nabla z\|_{2}^{2}+\|\nabla z\|_{p}^{p}-\left\|f\left(\frac{a+z}{\lambda}\right)\right\|_{2}\|z\|_{2}+\lambda\|z\|_{2}^{2} . \tag{2.1.22}
\end{align*}
$$

We estimate the third term in (2.1.22) as follows,

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|f\left(\frac{a+z}{\lambda}\right)\right\|_{2}\|z\|_{2} & \leq\left[\left\|f\left(\frac{a+z}{\lambda}\right)-f\left(\frac{a}{\lambda}\right)\right\|_{2}+\left\|f\left(\frac{a}{\lambda}\right)\right\|_{2}\right]\|z\|_{2} \\
& \leq\left[\frac{L_{f}}{\lambda}\|\nabla z\|_{2}+\left\|f\left(\frac{a}{\lambda}\right)\right\|_{2}\right]\|z\|_{2} \\
& \leq \frac{1}{2 \lambda}\|\nabla z\|_{2}^{2}+\frac{L_{f}^{2}}{2 \lambda}\|z\|_{2}^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\left\|f\left(\frac{a}{\lambda}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\|z\|_{2}^{2} \tag{2.1.23}
\end{align*}
$$

where we have used Young's inequality in (2.1.23). It follows from (2.1.22)-(2.1.23) that,

$$
\begin{align*}
\langle T(z), z\rangle & \geq \frac{1}{2 \lambda}\|\nabla z\|_{2}^{2}+\|\nabla z\|_{p}^{p}+\left(\lambda-\frac{L_{f}^{2}}{2 \lambda}-\frac{1}{2}\right)\|z\|_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{2}\left\|f\left(\frac{a}{\lambda}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2} \\
& \geq\|\nabla z\|_{p}^{p}-\frac{1}{2}\left\|f\left(\frac{a}{\lambda}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2} \tag{2.1.24}
\end{align*}
$$

provided $\lambda>0$ is sufficiently large. Because $p \geq 2$ and $\left\|f\left(\frac{a}{\lambda}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2}$ is a constant, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{\|\nabla z\|_{p}}\langle T(z), z\rangle \geq\|\nabla z\|_{p}^{p-1}-\frac{\left\|f\left(\frac{a}{\lambda}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2}}{2\|\nabla z\|_{p}} \longrightarrow \infty, \quad \text { as }\|\nabla z\|_{p} \rightarrow \infty \tag{2.1.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence, $T$ is coercive.
Now, given that we have shown that $T$ is maximal monotone and coercive, then by Corollary 1.3 in [5], the operator $T: \mathrm{W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega) \rightarrow \mathrm{W}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)$ is surjective. Con-
sequently, given $(a, b) \in H$, and subsequently $\tilde{b}=b+\frac{1}{\lambda} \Delta a \in \mathrm{~W}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)$, we find $z \in \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$ such that $T(z)=\tilde{b}$. Choosing $y=\frac{a+z}{\lambda} \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\frac{1}{\lambda} \Delta z-\Delta_{p} z-f\left(\frac{a+z}{\lambda}\right)+\lambda z=b+\frac{1}{\lambda} \Delta a \tag{2.1.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is equivalent to

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\Delta\left(\frac{a+z}{\lambda}\right)-\Delta_{p} z-f(y)+\lambda z=b . \tag{2.1.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Rearranging the terms in (2.1.27) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\Delta y-\Delta_{p} z-f(y)=b-\lambda z \in L^{2}(\Omega) \tag{2.1.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence, $(y, z)$ is indeed in $\mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A})$ and, therefore, $\mathscr{A}+\omega I$ is m-accretive. By Kato's Theorem (see [27]), there is a unique function $U=(u, v) \in W^{1, \infty}(0, T, H)$, where $T>0$ is arbitrary, that solves

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{d}{d t}\binom{u}{v}^{t r}+(\mathscr{A}+\omega I)\binom{u}{v}^{t r}=\omega\binom{u}{v}^{t r}, \quad \text { a.e. } t \in[0, T]  \tag{2.1.29}\\
(u(0), v(0))=\left(u_{0}, v_{0}\right) \in \mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A}),
\end{array}\right.
$$

or equivalently, $U=(u, v) \in W^{1, \infty}(0, T, H)$ satisfies:

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{d}{d t}\binom{u}{v}^{t r}+\binom{-v}{-\Delta u-\Delta_{p} v-f(u)}^{t r}=0, \quad \text { a.e. } t \in[0, T]  \tag{2.1.30}\\
(u(0), v(0))=\left(u_{0}, v_{0}\right) \in \mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A})
\end{array}\right.
$$

This completes the proof and also furnishes the conclusions of Remark 2.1.1.

### 2.1.2 Locally Lipschitz Sources

In this subsection we relax the conditions on the source term and allow $f$ to be locally Lipschitz from $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$ into $L^{2}(\Omega)$.

Lemma 2.1.2. Assume that $f: H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{2}(\Omega)$ is locally Lipschitz and $\left(u_{0}, v_{0}\right) \in$ $\mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A})$. Then, Problem (1.0.1) has a unique solution $u$ such that $u \in C\left([0, T], H_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right)$, $u_{t} \in C\left([0, T], L^{2}(\Omega)\right) \cap L^{p}\left(0, T, W_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right), u_{t t} \in L^{\infty}\left(0, T, L^{2}(\Omega)\right)$, for some $T>0$, where $T$ depends on $\|U(0)\|_{H}=\left\|\left(u_{0}, v_{0}\right)\right\|_{H}, f(0)$, and the local Lipschitz constant of the mapping $f: H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{q}(\Omega)$, where $q$ is as defined in (1.1.2). Moreover, $u$ satisfies the energy identity (1.2.1).

Remark 2.1.2. The values of the parameter $q$ in (1.1.2) are inherited from the Sobolev imbeddings in (1.1.3). Moreover, $1 \leq q \leq \frac{6}{5}$, and so, by assumption, the mapping $f: \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{q}(\Omega)$ is automatically locally Lipschitz. However, it is essential to note here that the local existence time, $T$, in Lemma 2.1.2 does not depend on the local Lipschitz constant of $f$ as a map from $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$ into $L^{2}(\Omega)$.

Proof. We use a standard truncation of the source (for instance, see [5, 10]). Put

$$
f_{K}(u):= \begin{cases}f(u), & \text { if }\|\nabla u\|_{2} \leq K  \tag{2.1.31}\\ f\left(\frac{K u}{\|\nabla u\|_{2}}\right), & \text { if }\|\nabla u\|_{2}>K\end{cases}
$$

where $K^{2}>2\left[\left\|u_{t}(0)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\|\nabla u(0)\|_{2}^{2}\right]$. In particular, the mapping $f_{K}: \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{2}(\Omega)$
is globally Lipschitz continuous. We consider the truncated problem:

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
u_{t t}-\Delta u-\Delta_{p} u_{t}=f_{K}(u) \quad \text { in } \quad \Omega \times(0, T)  \tag{2.1.32}\\
\left\{u(0), u_{t}(0)\right\}=\left\{u_{0}, u_{1}\right\} \in \mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A}) \\
u=0 \quad \text { on } \Gamma \times(0, T)
\end{array}\right.
$$

By the results of Lemma 2.1.1 and, more precisely, the conclusions of Remark 2.1.1, (2.1.32) has a unique global solution $u^{K}$ such that, $u^{K} \in C^{0}\left([0, T], \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right), u_{t}^{K} \in$ $C^{0}\left([0, T], L^{2}(\Omega)\right), u_{t t}^{K} \in L^{\infty}\left(0, T, L^{2}(\Omega)\right)$, and $u_{t}^{K}(t) \in \mathrm{W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$, a.e. $t \in[0, T]$, where $T>0$ is arbitrarily large. Note that $f_{K}$ is also globally Lipschitz from $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{q}(\Omega)$, where $q$ is as defined in (1.1.2). That is, there exists a constant $L_{f}(K)>0$ such that

$$
\left\|f_{K}(u)-f_{K}(v)\right\|_{q} \leq L_{f}(K)\|\nabla(u-v)\|_{2}, \text { for all } u, v \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)
$$

In what follows, we shall write $u$ for the solution, $u^{K}$, to (2.1.32). The strong regularity of $u=u^{K}$ allows us to test the PDE in (2.1.32) with $u_{t}$. By multiplying the PDE in (2.1.32) by $u_{t}$ and integrating in space and time, one easily obtains the following energy identity:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{1}{2}\left(\left\|u_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}\right)+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right|^{p} d x d s \\
& \quad=\frac{1}{2}\left(\left\|u_{t}(0)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\|\nabla u(0)\|_{2}^{2}\right)+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f_{K}(u(s)) u_{t}(s) d x d s \tag{2.1.33}
\end{align*}
$$

for all $t>0$. Let $\mathscr{E}(t)$ denote the quadratic the energy, that is,

$$
\mathscr{E}(t):=\frac{1}{2}\left(\left\|u_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}\right) .
$$

Then, (2.1.33) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{E}(t)+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right|^{p} d x d s=\mathscr{E}(0)+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f_{K}(u(s)) u_{t}(s) d x d s \tag{2.1.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Hölder's inequality with $q$ and $q^{\prime}$, where $q$ is defined in (1.1.2) and $\frac{1}{q}+\frac{1}{q^{\prime}}=1$, along with Young's inequality with $p$ and $p^{\prime}=\frac{p}{p-1}$, the last term in (2.1.34) is estimated as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{\Omega} f_{K}(u(s)) & u_{t}(s) d x \leq\left\|f_{K}(u(s))\right\|_{q}\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{q^{\prime}} \\
& \leq C_{\epsilon}\left\|f_{K}(u(s))\right\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}}+\epsilon\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{q^{\prime}}^{p} \\
& \leq C_{\epsilon}\left(\left\|f_{K}(u(s))-f_{K}(0)\right\|_{q}+\left\|f_{K}(0)\right\|_{q}\right)^{p^{\prime}}+\epsilon\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{q^{\prime}}^{p} \\
& \leq C_{\epsilon, p}\left\|f_{K}(u(s))-f_{K}(0)\right\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}}+C_{\epsilon, p}\|f(0)\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}}+\epsilon\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{q^{\prime}}^{p} \\
& \leq C_{\epsilon, p}\left(L_{f}(K)\right)^{p^{\prime}}\|\nabla u(s)\|_{2}^{p^{\prime}}+C_{f}+\epsilon\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{q^{\prime}}^{p} \tag{2.1.35}
\end{align*}
$$

where $C_{f}=C_{\epsilon, p}\|f(0)\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}}$. Note that we have used the fact that $f_{K}: \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{q}(\Omega)$ is globally Lipschitz continuous with Lipschitz constant $L_{f}(K)$. By recalling the imbeddings in (1.1.3), we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{\Omega} f_{K}(u(s)) u_{t}(s) d x d t & \leq C_{\epsilon, p}\left(L_{f}(K)\right)^{p^{\prime}}\|\nabla u(s)\|_{2}^{p^{\prime}}+C_{f}+\epsilon C\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} \\
& \leq C_{K} \mathscr{E}(s)^{\frac{p}{2(p-1)}}+C_{f}+\epsilon C\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} \tag{2.1.36}
\end{align*}
$$

where $C_{K}=C_{\epsilon, p}\left(L_{f}(K)\right)^{p^{\prime}}$. It follows from (2.1.34), (2.1.36) and the fact $\frac{p}{2(p-1)} \leq 1$
that

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathscr{E}(t) & +\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d t \\
& \leq \mathscr{E}(0)+C_{K} \int_{0}^{t} \mathscr{E}(s)^{\frac{p}{2(p-1)}} d s+C_{f} t+\epsilon C \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s \\
& \leq \mathscr{E}(0)+C_{K} \int_{0}^{t} \mathscr{E}(s) d s+C_{K, f} T+\epsilon C \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s \tag{2.1.37}
\end{align*}
$$

for all $0 \leq t \leq T$, where $T>0$ will chosen below and $C_{K, f}=C_{K}+C_{f}$. By choosing $\epsilon>0$ sufficiently small, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{E}(t)+c_{\epsilon} \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s \leq \mathscr{E}(0)+C_{K, f} T+C_{K} \int_{0}^{t} \mathscr{E}(s) d s \tag{2.1.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $0 \leq t \leq T$. By Gronwall's inequality, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{E}(t) \leq\left(\mathscr{E}(0)+C_{K, f} T\right) e^{C_{K} t} \tag{2.1.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $0 \leq t \leq T$.
Now, we recall $K^{2}>4 \mathscr{E}(0)$. Then we can choose $T>0$ small enough so that $\mathscr{E}(0)+C_{K, f} T \leq \frac{1}{4} K^{2}$, say $T=\frac{K^{2}-4 \mathscr{E}(0)}{4 C_{K, f}}$. Therefore, by requiring $t \leq \frac{1}{C_{K}} \ln 2$, one has

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{E}(t) \leq\left(\mathscr{E}(0)+C_{K, f} T\right) e^{C_{K} t} \leq \frac{1}{4} K^{2} e^{C_{K} t} \leq \frac{1}{2} K^{2} \tag{2.1.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

Consequently, by taking $T=\min \left\{\frac{K^{2}-4 \mathscr{E}(0)}{4 C_{K, f}}, \frac{1}{C_{K}} \ln 2\right\}$, then $\mathscr{E}(t) \leq \frac{1}{2} K^{2}$ for all $t \in$ $[0, T]$. Thus, $f_{K}(u(t))=f(u(t))$ on the interval $[0, T]$. Because $u$ solves (2.1.32), by the uniqueness of the solution to (2.1.32), we have that $u$ solves the original problem (1.0.1) on $[0, T]$ with the regularity enjoyed by $u^{K}$. The fact that $u_{t} \in$ $L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)$ follows immediately from (2.1.38), and the fact that $u$ satisfies the
energy identity (1.2.1) follows trivially from (2.1.33), completing the proof.

### 2.1.3 More General Source Term

In this subsection, we relax the conditions on the source. Specifically, we allow $f \in$ $C^{1}(\mathbb{R})$ with the following growth conditions for $|u| \geq 1:|f(u)| \leq c_{0}|u|^{r},\left|f^{\prime}(u)\right| \leq$ $c_{1}|u|^{r-1}, 1 \leq r<6$, for some positive constants $c_{0}, c_{1}$. Furthermore, for the values $3<r<6$, we require $f \in C^{2}(\mathbb{R})$ with the growth condition $\left|f^{\prime \prime}(u)\right| \leq c_{2}|u|^{r-2}$, for $|u| \geq 1$. Throughout this dissertation, the exponent of the source satisfies

$$
\begin{cases}1 \leq r<8-\frac{6}{p}, & \text { if } 2 \leq p<3  \tag{2.1.41}\\ 1 \leq r<6, & \text { if } p \geq 3\end{cases}
$$

Before reaching a complete proof of Theorem 1.2.1, we need some preparation.

Lemma 2.1.3. $f: H^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{q}(\Omega)$ is locally Lipschitz for some $\epsilon>0$, where $q$ is defined in (1.1.2).

Proof. From the restriction on $r$ in (2.1.41) we can choose $0<\epsilon<1$ such that

$$
\epsilon \leq \begin{cases}\frac{8-(6 / p)-r}{2 r}, & \text { if } 2 \leq p<3  \tag{2.1.42}\\ \frac{6-r}{2 r}, & \text { if } p \geq 3\end{cases}
$$

It is easy to see that $r \leq \frac{8 p-6}{p(1+2 \epsilon)}$, if $2 \leq p<3$, and $r \leq \frac{6}{1+2 \epsilon}$, if $p \geq 3$. Now, let $u, v \in \mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)$ with $\|u\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)},\|v\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)} \leq R$. Then, by the Mean Value Theorem,
we have for some $\xi_{u, v}$ between $u$ and $v$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\|f(u)-f(v)\|_{q}^{q} & =\int_{\Omega}|f(u)-f(v)|^{q} d x \leq \int_{\Omega}\left|f^{\prime}\left(\xi_{u, v}\right)(u-v)\right|^{q} d x \\
& \leq C \int_{\Omega}\left[\left(\left|\xi_{u, v}\right|^{r-1}+1\right)|u-v|\right]^{q} d x \\
& \leq C \int_{\Omega}|u-v|^{q}\left(|u|^{q(r-1)}+|v|^{q(r-1)}+1\right) d x . \tag{2.1.43}
\end{align*}
$$

Using Hölder's inequality on (2.1.43) with $\frac{6}{q(1+2 \epsilon)}$ and $\frac{6}{6-q(1+2 \epsilon)}$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
& \|f(u)-f(v)\|_{q}^{q} \\
& \quad \leq C\|u-v\|_{\frac{6}{1+2 \epsilon}}^{q}\left(\|u\|_{q(r-1) \frac{6}{6-q(1+2 \epsilon)}}^{q(r-1)}+\|v\|_{q(r-1)_{\frac{6}{6-q(1+2 \epsilon)}}^{q(r-1)}}^{q}+C_{1}\right), \tag{2.1.44}
\end{align*}
$$

where $C_{1}>0$ depends on $\Omega$. Notice that $q(r-1) \frac{6}{6-q(1+2 \epsilon)} \leq 6$. Indeed, for $2 \leq p<3$, a quick calculation yields

$$
\begin{aligned}
q(r-1) & \frac{6}{6-q(1+2 \epsilon)} \leq \frac{3 p}{4 p-3}\left(\frac{8 p-6}{p(1+2 \epsilon)}-1\right) \frac{6}{6-\frac{3 p}{4 p-3}(1+2 \epsilon)} \\
& =\frac{6}{1+2 \epsilon}
\end{aligned}
$$

For $p>3$ (recalling $q=1$ ), we have

$$
q(r-1) \frac{6}{6-q(1+2 \epsilon)} \leq \frac{6}{1+2 \epsilon}
$$

For $p=3$, we may choose $\delta$ in the definition of $q$ in (1.1.2) small enough so that $q(r-1) \frac{6}{6-q(1+2 \epsilon)} \leq 6$. By using the imbedding $\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow L^{\frac{6}{1+2 \epsilon}}(\Omega)$, it follows from (2.1.44) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|f(u)-f(v)\|_{q}^{q} \leq C\|u-v\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)}^{q}\left(\|u\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)}^{q(r-1)}+\|v\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)}^{q(r-1)}+1\right) . \tag{2.1.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

Because $\|u\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)},\|v\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)} \leq R$, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|f(u)-f(v)\|_{q}^{q} \leq C_{R}^{q}\|u-v\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)}^{q}, \tag{2.1.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C_{R}^{q}=C\left(2 R^{q(r-1)}+1\right)$ and so $f: \mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{q}(\Omega)$ is locally Lipschitz.
Since $f$ is not in general locally Lipschitz from $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$ into $L^{2}(\Omega)$, we will construct a Lipschitz approximation of $f$. We consider a sequence of smooth cut-off functions $\eta_{n}$ introduced in [24], where $0 \leq \eta_{n} \leq 1, \eta_{n}(u)=1$ if $|u| \leq n, \eta_{n}(u)=0$ if $|u|>2 n$, and $\left|\eta_{n}^{\prime}(u)\right| \leq C / n$ for some constant $C$ (independent of $n$ ). Define

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{n}(u):=f(u) \eta_{n}(u) . \tag{2.1.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 2.1.4. For each $n \in \mathbb{N}$, the function $f_{n}$ has the following properties:

- $f_{n}: H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{2}(\Omega)$ is globally Lipschitz continuous with Lipschitz constant depending on $n$.
- $f_{n}: H^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{q}(\Omega)$ is locally Lipschitz continuous with Lipschitz constant that does not depend on $n$, where $q$ and $\epsilon$ are as defined in Lemma 2.1.3.

Proof. Let $u, v \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$. Consider the four regions

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Omega_{1}:=\{x \in \Omega:|u(x)|,|v(x)| \leq 2 n\}, \\
& \Omega_{2}:=\{x \in \Omega:|u(x)| \leq 2 n,|v(x)|>2 n\}, \\
& \Omega_{3}:=\{x \in \Omega:|v(x)| \leq 2 n,|u(x)|>2 n\}, \\
& \Omega_{4}:=\{x \in \Omega:|u(x)|,|v(x)|>2 n\}, \tag{2.1.48}
\end{align*}
$$

and observe that $\Omega=\bigcup_{i=1}^{4} \Omega_{i}$. Then,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}(v)\right\|_{2}^{2}=\sum_{i=1}^{4} \int_{\Omega_{i}}\left|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}(v)\right|^{2} d x \tag{2.1.49}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, by the Mean Value Theorem applied to $f$ and $\eta_{n}$ we find

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{\Omega_{1}} & \left|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}(v)\right|^{2} d x=\int_{\Omega_{1}}\left|f(u) \eta_{n}(u)-f(v) \eta_{n}(v)\right|^{2} d x \\
& =\int_{\Omega_{1}}\left|f(u) \eta_{n}(u)-f(v) \eta_{n}(u)+f(v) \eta_{n}(u)-f(v) \eta_{n}(v)\right|^{2} d x  \tag{2.1.50}\\
& \leq \int_{\Omega_{1}}\left\{\left|f^{\prime}\left(\xi_{u, v}\right)\right||u-v|+\left|f(v) \| \eta_{n}^{\prime}\left(\tilde{\xi}_{u, v}\right)\right||u-v|\right\}^{2} d x \tag{2.1.51}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\xi_{u, v}$ and $\tilde{\xi}_{u, v}$ lie between $u$ and $v$. Because $|u|,|v| \leq 2 n$, implied by the definition of $\Omega_{1}$, then $\left|\xi_{u, v}\right|,\left|\tilde{\xi}_{u, v}\right| \leq 2 n$. Recalling properties of $f$ (from Assumption 1.1.1) and $\eta$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{\Omega_{1}} \mid f_{n}(u) & -\left.f_{n}(v)\right|^{2} d x \\
& \leq C \int_{\Omega_{1}}\left\{\left(\left|\xi_{u, v}\right|^{r-1}+1\right)+\left(|v|^{r}+1\right) \frac{1}{n}\right\}^{2}|u-v|^{2} d x \\
& \leq C n^{r-1} \int_{\Omega_{1}}|u-v|^{2} d x . \tag{2.1.52}
\end{align*}
$$

For the second region $\Omega_{2}$, we notice here that $f_{n}(v)=0\left(\right.$ as $\left.\eta_{n}(v)=0\right)$. So,

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{\Omega_{2}}\left|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}(v)\right|^{2} d x & =\int_{\Omega_{2}}\left|f(u) \eta_{n}(u)\right|^{2} d x \\
& =\int_{\Omega_{2}}\left|f(u)\left(\eta_{n}(u)-\eta_{n}(v)\right)\right|^{2} d x \tag{2.1.53}
\end{align*}
$$

Notice that, by switching the roles of $u$ and $v$ in the third and fourth terms of (2.1.50),
we can estimate (2.1.53) as we have done in (2.1.51) and (2.1.52) so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\Omega_{2}}\left|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}(v)\right|^{2} d x \leq C n^{r-1} \int_{\Omega_{2}}|u-v|^{2} d x \tag{2.1.54}
\end{equation*}
$$

The integral over $\Omega_{3}$ is estimated the same way as $\Omega_{2}$ by reversing the roles of $u$ and $v$. Finally, in region $\Omega_{4}, f_{n}(u)=f_{n}(v)=0$ and the estimate is trivial. Combining these facts with (2.1.52) and (2.1.54) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}(v)\right\|_{2}^{2} \leq C n^{r-1}\|u-v\|_{2}^{2} \tag{2.1.55}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, for each $n \in \mathbb{N}, f_{n}: L^{2}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{2}(\Omega)$ is globally Lipschitz continuous with Lipschitz constant $C_{n}=C n^{r-1}$, verifying the first statement of the lemma.

To prove the second statement, let $u, v \in \mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)$ with $\|u\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)},\|v\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)} \leq R$ and recall the four regions $\Omega_{i}$ introduced in (2.1.48). Then,

$$
\left\|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}(v)\right\|_{q}^{q}=\sum_{i=1}^{4}\left\|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}(v)\right\|_{L^{q}\left(\Omega_{i}\right)}^{q}
$$

We begin by looking at the $L^{q}$ norm of $f_{n}(u)-f_{n}(v)$ on the region $\Omega_{1}$;

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}(v)\right\|_{L^{q}\left(\Omega_{1}\right)} \\
& \quad \leq\left\|(f(u)-f(v)) \eta_{n}(u)\right\|_{L^{q}\left(\Omega_{1}\right)}+\left\|f(v) \eta_{n}(u)-f(v) \eta_{n}(v)\right\|_{L^{q}\left(\Omega_{1}\right)} \\
& \quad \leq\|f(u)-f(v)\|_{L^{q}\left(\Omega_{1}\right)}+\left(\int_{\Omega_{1}}\left\{\left|f(v) \| \eta_{n}(u)-\eta_{n}(v)\right|\right\}^{q} d x\right)^{\frac{1}{q}} \tag{2.1.56}
\end{align*}
$$

By the Mean Value Theorem applied to $\eta_{n}$, the fact that $f$ is locally Lipschitz from
$\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{q}(\Omega)$ and $|f(s)| \leq c|s|^{r}$ for $|s| \geq 1$, we have,

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}(v)\right\|_{L^{q}\left(\Omega_{1}\right)} & \leq C_{R}\|u-v\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)} \\
& +C\left(\int_{\Omega_{1}}\left\{\left(|v|^{r}+1\right)\left|\eta_{n}^{\prime}\left(\xi_{u, v}\right) \| u-v\right|\right\}^{q} d x\right)^{\frac{1}{q}} . \tag{2.1.57}
\end{align*}
$$

Because $\left|\eta_{n}^{\prime}\right| \leq C / n$ and $|v| \leq 2 n$ in $\Omega_{1}$, we obtain $|v|\left|\eta_{n}^{\prime}\left(\xi_{u, v}\right)\right| \leq 2 C$ and thus

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}(v)\right\|_{L^{q}\left(\Omega_{1}\right)} & \leq C_{R}\|u-v\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)} \\
& +C\left(\int_{\Omega_{1}}\left(|v|^{q(r-1)}+1\right)|u-v|^{q} d x\right)^{\frac{1}{q}} . \tag{2.1.58}
\end{align*}
$$

The same analysis as in (2.1.43) through (2.1.46) applied to the second term of (2.1.58) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\int_{\Omega_{1}}\left(|v|^{q(r-1)}+1\right)|u-v|^{q} d x\right)^{\frac{1}{q}} \leq C_{R}\|u-v\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)} \tag{2.1.59}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C_{R}$ is as in (2.1.46). Combining (2.1.58) and (2.1.59) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}(v)\right\|_{L^{q}\left(\Omega_{1}\right)} \leq C_{R}^{\prime}\|u-v\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)} \tag{2.1.60}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C_{R}^{\prime}>0$ depends on $R$. It is important to note here that the estimate for $\Omega_{1}$ does not rely on the bound for $|u|$ in the region, but only on the fact that $|v| \leq 2 n$ and so the estimate for $\Omega_{1}$ also holds on $\Omega_{3}$. Furthermore, by switching the roles of $u$ and $v$, we easily obtain the same bound for $\Omega_{2}$. That is, for $i=1,2,3$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}(v)\right\|_{L^{q}\left(\Omega_{i}\right)} \leq C_{R}^{\prime}\|u-v\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)} . \tag{2.1.61}
\end{equation*}
$$

Finally, since $f_{n}(u)=f_{n}(v)=0$ in $\Omega_{4}$, it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}(v)\right\|_{q} \leq C_{R}^{\prime}\|u-v\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)} \tag{2.1.62}
\end{equation*}
$$

concluding the proof of Lemma 2.1.4.

### 2.1.4 The Approximated Problem

In order to prove the existence statement in Theorem 1.2.1, we approximate the original problem (1.0.1) by using the cut-off functions $\eta_{m}$, introduced previously. More precisely, we consider the $m$ th problem given by:

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
u_{t t}^{m}-\Delta u^{m}-\Delta_{p} u_{t}^{m}=f_{m}\left(u^{m}\right) \quad \text { in } \quad \Omega \times(0, T)  \tag{2.1.63}\\
\left(u^{m}(0), u_{t}^{m}(0)\right)=\left(u_{m, 0}, u_{m, 1}\right) \in \mathcal{D}(\mathscr{A}), \\
u^{m}=0 \quad \text { on } \quad \Gamma \times(0, T),
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\left(u_{m, 0}, u_{m, 1}\right) \rightarrow\left(u_{0}, u_{1}\right)$ in $H$, as $m \rightarrow \infty$, with $\left\|\left(u_{m, 0}, u_{m, 1}\right)\right\|_{H}<\left\|\left(u_{0}, u_{1}\right)\right\|_{H}+1$, for all $m \in \mathbb{N}$, and $f_{m}=f \eta_{m}$ as defined in (2.1.47). We wish to apply Lemma 2.1.2 to the $m$ th problem (2.1.63). In order to do so, we recall the second statement in Lemma 2.1.4, which assures us that the local Lipschitz constants of $f_{m}: \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \rightarrow$ $L^{q}(\Omega)$ are independent of $m$. In addition, by the proof of Lemma 2.1.2, the local existence time depends on the choice $K^{2}>2\left\|\left(u_{m, 0}, u_{m, 1}\right)\right\|_{H}^{2}$. However, by choosing $K^{2}>2\left(\left\|\left(u_{0}, u_{1}\right)\right\|_{H}+1\right)^{2}$ in the proof of Lemma 2.1.2, we have one $K$ that properly bounds the norms of the initial data for each $m \in \mathbb{N}$. Therefore, it follows from Lemma 2.1.2 that, for each $m \in \mathbb{N}$, the $m$ th Problem (2.1.63) has a unique solution $u^{m}$ such that $u^{m} \in C^{0}\left([0, T], \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right), u_{t}^{m} \in C^{0}\left([0, T], L^{2}(\Omega)\right), u_{t t}^{m} \in L^{\infty}\left(0, T, L^{2}(\Omega)\right)$, $u_{t}^{m} \in L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)$, for some $T>0$ (independent of $m$ ), and $u^{m}$ satisfies the
energy identity,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{E}_{m}(t)+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla u_{t}^{m}(s)\right|^{p} d x d s=\mathscr{E}_{m}(0)+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f_{m}\left(u^{m}(s)\right) u_{t}^{m}(s) d x d s \tag{2.1.64}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $t \in[0, T]$, where $\mathscr{E}_{m}(t):=\frac{1}{2}\left(\left\|u_{t}^{m}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\left\|\nabla u^{m}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}\right)$. By the same analysis used to obtain (2.1.38) and (2.1.39), we conclude that there exists $C_{T}>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{E}_{m}(t)+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{m}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s \leq C_{T} \quad \text { for all } t \in[0, T] \tag{2.1.65}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also, with $\frac{1}{p}+\frac{1}{p^{\prime}}=1$, we note that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\left.\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}| | \nabla u_{t}^{m}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{m}\right|^{p^{\prime}} d x d s=\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{m}\right\|_{p}^{p} d s \leq C_{T} \tag{2.1.66}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $t \in[0, T]$. That is, $\left\{\left|\nabla u_{t}^{m}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{m}\right\}$ is a bounded sequence in $\left(L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, L^{p^{\prime}}(\Omega)\right)\right)^{3}$. Therefore, it follows from (2.1.65)-(2.1.66) that there exists a subsequence of $\left\{u^{m}\right\}$, which we still denote by $\left\{u^{m}\right\}$, such that

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
u^{m} \rightarrow u \text { weak }  \tag{2.1.67}\\
u_{t}^{m} \rightarrow u_{t} \text { weak }^{*} \text { in } L^{\infty}\left(0, T, \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right) \\
u_{t}^{m} \rightarrow u_{t} \text { weakly in } L^{p}\left(0, T, L^{2}(\Omega)\right), \\
\left.\left|\nabla u_{t}^{m}\right|^{p-2}(\Omega)\right) \\
\mid u_{t}^{m} \rightarrow \psi \text { weakly in }\left(L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, L^{p^{\prime}}(\Omega)\right)\right)^{3}
\end{array}\right.
$$

for some $\psi \in\left(L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, L^{p^{\prime}}(\Omega)\right)\right)^{3}$.
At this point, we note that $\Delta_{p} u_{t}^{m} \rightarrow \eta$ weakly in $X^{*}$, for some $\eta \in X^{*}$, where $X=L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)$ and $X^{*}=L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)\right)$ is the dual of $X$. To see this
fact, let $\phi \in X$. Then, from the last convergence in (2.1.67), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle\Delta_{p} u_{t}^{m}, \phi\right\rangle_{X^{*}, X}=\int_{0}^{T} \int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla u_{t}^{m}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{m} \cdot \nabla \phi d x d s \longrightarrow \int_{0}^{T} \int_{\Omega} \psi \cdot \nabla \phi d x d s \tag{2.1.68}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, $\Delta_{p} u_{t}^{m}$ is weakly convergent in $X^{*}$. Given that $X^{*}$ is a reflexive Banach space, and by a standard theorem (e.g., [32]), $X^{*}$ is sequentially weakly complete. Hence, there exists an $\eta \in X^{*}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{p} u_{t}^{m} \longrightarrow \eta \quad \text { weakly in } L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)\right) \tag{2.1.69}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us note here that $H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \subset \mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega) \subset L^{p^{\prime}}(\Omega)$ where each injection is continuous and the first injection is compact. Also, given that $\left\{u^{m}\right\}$ is bounded in $L^{\infty}\left(0, T, \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right)$, then, in particular, $\left\{u^{m}\right\}$ is also bounded in $L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right)$. We also know that $\left\{u_{t}^{m}\right\}$ is bounded in $L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)$, and thus, in particular, $\left\{u_{t}^{m}\right\}$ is bounded in $L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, L^{p^{\prime}}(\Omega)\right)$ by Hölder's inequality. Hence, by Aubin's Compactness Theorem there exists a subsequence, labeled again by $\left\{u^{m}\right\}$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
u^{m} \rightarrow u \text { strongly in } L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, \mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)\right), \tag{2.1.70}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\epsilon>0$ is as in (2.1.42).
Our goal now is to identify the function $\eta$ and pass to the limit. For this purpose, let $\tilde{u}(t)=u^{m}(t)-u^{n}(t)$ and $\tilde{u}_{t}(t)=u_{t}^{m}(t)-u_{t}^{n}(t)$. Straightforward calculations show that $\tilde{u}$ satisfies the following energy identity:

$$
\begin{align*}
\tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t) & +\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(\left|\nabla u_{t}^{m}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{m}-\left|\nabla u_{t}^{n}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{n}\right) \cdot \nabla \tilde{u}_{t} d x d s \\
& =\tilde{\mathscr{E}}(0)+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(f_{m}\left(u^{m}\right)-f_{n}\left(u^{n}\right)\right) \tilde{u}_{t} d x d s, \tag{2.1.71}
\end{align*}
$$

for all $t \in[0, T]$, where $\tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\left\|\tilde{u}_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\|\nabla \tilde{u}(t)\|_{2}^{2}\right)$. Since $\left(u_{m, 0}, u_{m, 1}\right) \rightarrow\left(u_{0}, u_{1}\right)$ in $H$ by assumption, $\left\{\left(u_{m, 0}, u_{m, 1}\right)\right\}$ is Cauchy in $H$ and so,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\mathscr{E}}(0)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\left\|u_{m, 1}-u_{n, 1}\right\|_{2}^{2}+\left\|\nabla\left(u_{m, 0}-u_{m, 1}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2}\right) \longrightarrow 0 \tag{2.1.72}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $m, n \longrightarrow \infty$.
Next, we shall show that the last term in (2.1.71) converges to 0 as $m, n \longrightarrow \infty$. To do so, we recall the bounds in (2.1.65) and the convergences in (2.1.67). Thus, we can choose $R>0$ such that $\left\|u^{m}\right\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)},\|u\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)} \leq R$, for all $m \in \mathbb{N}$. The last term in (2.1.71) is estimated as follows

$$
\begin{align*}
I & :=\left|\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(f_{m}\left(u^{m}\right)-f_{n}\left(u^{n}\right)\right) \tilde{u}_{t} d x d s\right| \leq \int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|f_{m}\left(u^{m}\right)-f_{m}(u)\right|\left|\tilde{u}_{t}\right| d x d s \\
& +\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|f_{m}(u)-f(u)\right|\left|\tilde{u}_{t}\right| d x d s+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|f(u)-f_{n}(u) \| \tilde{u}_{t}\right| d x d s \\
& +\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}\left(u^{n}\right)\right|\left|\tilde{u}_{t}\right| d x d s \tag{2.1.73}
\end{align*}
$$

By using Hölder's inequality with the exponents $q$ and $q^{\prime}$, where $q$ is as defined in (1.1.2), followed by the Sobolev imbeddings in (1.1.3) applied to $\tilde{u}_{t}$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
I & \leq C\left[\int_{0}^{t}\left\|f_{m}\left(u^{m}\right)-f_{m}(u)\right\|_{q}\left\|\nabla \tilde{u}_{t}\right\|_{p} d s+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|f_{m}(u)-f(u)\right\|_{q}\left\|\nabla \tilde{u}_{t}\right\|_{p} d s\right. \\
& \left.+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|f(u)-f_{n}(u)\right\|_{q}\left\|\nabla \tilde{u}_{t}\right\|_{p} d s+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|f_{n}(u)-f_{n}\left(u^{n}\right)\right\|_{q}\left\|\nabla \tilde{u}_{t}\right\|_{p} d s\right] \\
& :=I_{1}+I_{2}+I_{3}+I_{4} \tag{2.1.74}
\end{align*}
$$

Because $f_{m}$ and $f_{n}$ are locally Lipschitz from $\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{q}(\Omega)$, as furnished by

Lemma 2.1.4, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{1} \leq C_{R} \int_{0}^{T}\left\|u^{m}-u\right\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)}\left\|\nabla \tilde{u}_{t}\right\|_{p} d s \tag{2.1.75}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{4} \leq C_{R} \int_{0}^{T}\left\|u^{n}-u\right\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)}\left\|\nabla \tilde{u}_{t}\right\|_{p} d s \tag{2.1.76}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C_{R}$ is the local Lipschitz constant of $f_{m}$, which can be taken to be the same for all $m \in \mathbb{N}$. Combining (2.1.75)-(2.1.76) and employing Hölder's inequality with $p$ and $p^{\prime}$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
I_{1}+I_{4} \leq C_{R}\left[\left\|u^{m}-u\right\|_{L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, \mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)\right)}\right. & \left.+\left\|u^{n}-u\right\|_{L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, \mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)\right)}\right] \\
\cdot & \left\|\tilde{u}_{t}\right\|_{L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)} \tag{2.1.77}
\end{align*}
$$

Because $u_{t}^{m}$ is bounded in $L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)$, so is $\tilde{u}_{t}$. Hence, it follows from (2.1.77) and the strong convergence in (2.1.70) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{1}+I_{4} \longrightarrow 0, \text { as } m, n \rightarrow \infty \tag{2.1.78}
\end{equation*}
$$

As for $I_{2}$ and $I_{3}$, we also employ Hölder's inequality with $p$ and $p^{\prime}$ to obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
I_{2}+I_{3} \leq C\left[\left(\int_{0}^{T}\left\|f_{m}(u)-f(u)\right\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}} d s\right)^{\frac{1}{p^{\prime}}}\right. & \left.+\left(\int_{0}^{T}\left\|f(u)-f_{n}(u)\right\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}} d s\right)^{\frac{1}{p^{\prime}}}\right] \\
\cdot & \left\|\tilde{u}_{t}\right\|_{L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)} \tag{2.1.79}
\end{align*}
$$

Now, because $\eta_{m}(u) \longrightarrow 1$ as $m \longrightarrow \infty$, we have

$$
\left|f_{m}(u)-f(u)\right|^{q}=\left|f(u)\left(\eta_{m}(u)-1\right)\right|^{q} \longrightarrow 0 \quad \text { a.e. } \in \Omega \times[0, T]
$$

as $m \rightarrow \infty$. Also, given that $f(u) \in L^{q}(\Omega)$ for all $u \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$, as furnished by Lemma 2.1.3, then $\left|f_{m}(u)-f(u)\right|^{q} \leq 2^{q}|f(u)|^{q} \in L^{1}(\Omega)$. Therefore, by the Lebesgue Dominated Convergence Theorem, $f_{m}(u) \rightarrow f(u)$ in $L^{q}(\Omega)$, or $\left\|f_{m}(u)-f(u)\right\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}} \rightarrow 0$ a.e. $t \in[0, T]$. Additionally, because $f$ is locally Lipschitz from $\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{q}(\Omega)$ (see Lemma 2.1.3), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|f_{m}(u)-f(u)\right\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}} & \leq 2^{p^{\prime}}\|f(u)\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}} \leq C\left(\|f(u)-f(0)\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}}+\|f(0)\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}}\right) \\
& \leq C_{R}^{p^{\prime}}\|u\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)}^{p^{\prime}}+C_{f} \in L^{1}(0, T) \tag{2.1.80}
\end{align*}
$$

Given that $u \in L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, \mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)\right)$, from (2.1.70). Again, by the Lebesgue Dominated Convergence Theorem, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\int_{0}^{T}\left\|f_{m}(u)-f(u)\right\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}} d s\right)^{\frac{1}{p^{\prime}}} \longrightarrow 0 \tag{2.1.81}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $m \longrightarrow \infty$ (and similarly for $n \rightarrow \infty$ ). It follows from the boundedness of $\tilde{u}_{t}$ in $L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right),(2.1 .81)$ and (2.1.79) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{2}+I_{3} \longrightarrow 0, \text { as } m, n \rightarrow \infty \tag{2.1.82}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, from (2.1.6) it is clear that,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(\left|\nabla u_{t}^{m}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{m}-\left|\nabla u_{t}^{n}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{n}\right) \cdot \nabla\left(u_{t}^{m}-u_{t}^{n}\right) d x d s \geq 0 \tag{2.1.83}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore, it follows from (2.1.72), (2.1.78) and (2.1.82) that, for all $t \in[0, T]$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t)+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(\left|\nabla u_{t}^{m}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{m}-\left|\nabla u_{t}^{n}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{n}\right) \cdot \nabla\left(u_{t}^{m}-u_{t}^{n}\right) d x d s \longrightarrow 0 \tag{2.1.84}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $m, n \longrightarrow \infty$. This implies that $\tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t) \longrightarrow 0$, i.e. $\left(u^{m}, u_{t}^{m}\right)$ is uniformly Cauchy in $H$ on $[0, T]$, and so $\left(u^{m}, u_{t}^{m}\right) \longrightarrow\left(u, u_{t}\right)$ in $H$ uniformly on $[0, T]$.

### 2.1.5 Proper Proof of the Existence Statement in Theorem

### 1.2.1

We recall the regularity of $u^{m}$, the solution of the $m$-th problem, namely, $u^{m} \in$ $C\left([0, T], \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right), u_{t}^{m} \in C\left([0, T], L^{2}(\Omega)\right), u_{t t}^{m} \in L^{\infty}\left(0, T, L^{2}(\Omega)\right), u_{t}^{m} \in L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)$. In particular, $u^{m}$ verifies,

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(-u_{t}^{m} \phi_{t}+\right. & \left.\nabla u^{m} \cdot \nabla \phi\right) d x d s+\left.\int_{\Omega} u_{t}^{m} \phi\right|_{s=0} ^{s=t} d x+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla u_{t}^{m}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{m} \cdot \nabla \phi d x d s \\
& =\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f_{m}\left(u^{m}\right) \phi d x d s \tag{2.1.85}
\end{align*}
$$

for all $t \in[0, T]$ and for all test functions $H^{1}\left(0, T, L^{2}(\Omega)\right) \cap L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)$.
Let us first note that because $\left(u^{m}, u_{t}^{m}\right) \longrightarrow\left(u, u_{t}\right)$ in $H$ uniformly on $[0, T]$, then $u \in C\left([0, T], \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right)$ and $u_{t} \in C\left([0, T], L^{2}(\Omega)\right)$. In addition, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& u(0)=\lim _{t \rightarrow 0^{+}} u(t)=\lim _{t \rightarrow 0^{+}} \lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} u^{m}(t)=\lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} \lim _{t \rightarrow 0^{+}} u^{m}(t)=\lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} u_{m, 0}=u_{0}, \\
& u_{t}(0)=\lim _{t \rightarrow 0^{+}} u_{t}(t)=\lim _{t \rightarrow 0^{+}} \lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} u_{t}^{m}(t)=\lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} \lim _{t \rightarrow 0^{+}} u_{t}^{m}(t)=\lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} u_{m, 1}=u_{1}, \tag{2.1.86}
\end{align*}
$$

where the limits in $m$ are strong limits in $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$ and $L^{2}(\Omega)$, respectively. In view of the convergences in (2.1.67), passing to the limit in the first three terms of (2.1.85) is trivial. However, passing to the limit in the last two terms of (2.1.85) requires some
care. As for the last term in (2.1.85), we recall the fact that $f_{m}: \mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{q}(\Omega)$ is locally Lipschitz with the same Lipschitz constant for all $m \in \mathbb{N}$. By the imbeddings in (1.1.3), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(f_{m}\left(u^{m}\right)-f(u)\right) \phi d x d s\right| & \leq \int_{0}^{T}\left\|\left(f_{m}\left(u^{m}\right)-f_{m}(u)\right)\right\|_{q}\|\nabla \phi\|_{p} d s \\
& +\int_{0}^{T}\left\|\left(f_{m}(u)-f(u)\right)\right\|_{q}\|\nabla \phi\|_{p} d s \tag{2.1.87}
\end{align*}
$$

for all $t \in[0, T]$. By going back to (2.1.74) we see that the right-hand side of (2.1.87) is exactly the term $I_{1}+I_{2}$ in (2.1.74), but with $\tilde{u}_{t}$ is being replaced by $\phi$. However, (2.1.77) and (2.1.82) show that the right-hand side of (2.1.87) converges to zero, as $m \rightarrow \infty$. That is, for all $t \in[0, T]$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{m \rightarrow \infty} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f_{m}\left(u^{m}\right) \phi d x d s=\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f(u) \phi d x d s \tag{2.1.88}
\end{equation*}
$$

As for the term due to the $p$-Laplacian in (2.1.85), we first recall (2.1.83) and (2.1.84), which yield

$$
\begin{align*}
& -\left\langle\Delta_{p} u_{t}^{m}-\Delta_{p} u_{t}^{n}, u_{t}^{m}-u_{t}^{n}\right\rangle_{X^{*}, X} \\
& \quad=\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(\left|\nabla u_{t}^{m}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{m}-\left|\nabla u_{t}^{n}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{n}\right) \cdot \nabla\left(u_{t}^{m}-u_{t}^{n}\right) d x d s \longrightarrow 0 \tag{2.1.89}
\end{align*}
$$

where $X=L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)$ and $X^{*}=L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)\right)$ is the dual of $X$. In addition, we recall the weak convergences from (2.1.67) and (2.1.69);

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
u_{t}^{m} \rightarrow u_{t} \quad \text { weakly in } L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)  \tag{2.1.90}\\
\Delta_{p} u_{t}^{m} \rightarrow \eta \quad \text { weakly in } L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)\right)
\end{array}\right.
$$

Therefore, it follows from Lemma 1.3 of [5] that $\eta=\Delta_{p} u_{t}$, provided we show that
$\Delta_{p}: X \rightarrow X^{*}$ is maximal monotone. Clearly, (2.1.5) and (2.1.6) show that $\Delta_{p}$ is monotone from $X$ into $X^{*}$. To show it is maximal, it is enough to show that $\Delta_{p}$ is hemi-continuous from $X$ into $X^{*}$. To this end, let $u, v, \xi \in L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)$ and $\mu \in \mathbb{R}$. Then,

$$
-\left\langle\Delta_{p}(u+\mu v), \xi\right\rangle_{X^{*}, X}=\int_{0}^{T} \int_{\Omega}|\nabla(u+\mu v)|^{p-2} \nabla(u+\mu v) \cdot \nabla \xi d x d s
$$

Clearly,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{\mu \rightarrow 0}|\nabla(u+\mu v)|^{p-2} \nabla(u+\mu v) \cdot \nabla \xi=|\nabla u|^{p-2} \nabla u \cdot \nabla \xi \quad \text { a.e. } \Omega \times(0, T) \tag{2.1.91}
\end{equation*}
$$

and for $|\mu|<1$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left||\nabla(u+\mu v)|^{p-2} \nabla(u+\mu v) \cdot \nabla \xi\right| \leq 2^{p-2}\left(|\nabla u|^{p-1}+|\nabla u|^{p-1}\right)|\nabla \xi| \tag{2.1.92}
\end{equation*}
$$

In addition, $|\nabla u|^{p-1}|\nabla \xi|, \quad|\nabla v|^{p-1}|\nabla \xi| \in L^{1}(\Omega \times(0, T))$, because (similarly for $v$ ),

$$
\int_{0}^{T} \int_{\Omega}|\nabla u|^{p-1}|\nabla \xi| d x \leq \int_{0}^{T}\|\nabla u\|_{p}^{p-1}\|\nabla \xi\|_{p} d s \leq\|u\|_{X}^{p-1}\|\xi\|_{X}<\infty
$$

Therefore, by the Dominated Convergence Theorem we have

$$
\begin{align*}
-\lim _{\mu \rightarrow 0}\left\langle\Delta_{p}(u+\mu v), \xi\right\rangle_{X^{*}, X} & =\lim _{\mu \rightarrow 0} \int_{0}^{T} \int_{\Omega}|\nabla(u+\mu v)|^{p-2} \nabla(u+\mu v) \cdot \nabla \xi d x \\
& =\int_{0}^{T} \int_{\Omega}|\nabla u|^{p-2} \nabla u \cdot \nabla \xi d x=-\left\langle\Delta_{p} u, \xi\right\rangle_{X^{*}, X} \tag{2.1.93}
\end{align*}
$$

Hence, $\Delta_{p}$ is hemi-continuous from $X$ into $X^{*}$ and we conclude that $\eta=\Delta_{p} u_{t}$. Now, we have all the ingredients to pass to the limit in (2.1.85) to obtain that $u$ satisfies
the variational identity (1.1.44) and $u$ has the required regularity in Definition 1.1.4. This concludes the proof of the local existence statement in Theorem 1.2.1.

### 2.2 Energy Identity

Let $u$ be a local weak solution to (1.0.1) on $[0, T]$, as furnished by Section 2.1. Our goal here is to prove that $u$ satisfies the following energy identity:

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(t)+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s=E(0) \tag{2.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(t):=\frac{1}{2}\left\|u_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}-\int_{\Omega} F(u(t)) d x \tag{2.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $F(u)=\int_{0}^{u} f(s) d s$. We begin by proving that $u_{t t} \in L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)\right)$. To see this, let $\phi \in \mathrm{W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$ and recall that $u$ satisfies (1.1.44) in Definition 1.1.4. Then, for this particular $\phi$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(u_{t}(t), \phi\right)_{\Omega} & =\left(u_{t}(0), \phi\right)_{\Omega}-\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} \nabla u \cdot \nabla \phi d x d s \\
& -\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla u_{t}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t} \cdot \nabla \phi d x d s+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f(u) \phi d x d s \tag{2.2.3}
\end{align*}
$$

Thus, the mapping $t \mapsto\left(u_{t}(t), \phi\right)_{\Omega}$ is absolutely continuous on $[0, T]$ and for all $\phi \in \mathrm{W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\langle u_{t t}(t), \phi\right\rangle & :=\frac{d}{d t}\left\langle u_{t}(t), \phi\right\rangle=\frac{d}{d t}\left(u_{t}(t), \phi\right)_{\Omega}=-\int_{\Omega} \nabla u(t) \cdot \nabla \phi d x \\
& -\int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla u_{t}(t)\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}(t) \cdot \nabla \phi d x+\int_{\Omega} f(u(t)) \phi d x, \text { a.e. }[0, T] . \tag{2.2.4}
\end{align*}
$$

Applying Hölders inequality to the three terms in the right hand side of (2.2.4), one obtains

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|\left\langle u_{t t}(t), \phi\right\rangle\right| & \leq\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}\|\nabla \phi\|_{2}+\left\|\nabla u_{t}(t)\right\|_{p}^{p-1}\|\nabla \phi\|_{p}+\|f(u(t))\|_{q}\|\phi\|_{q^{\prime}} \\
& \leq\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}\|\nabla \phi\|_{p}+\left\|\nabla u_{t}(t)\right\|_{p}^{p-1}\|\nabla \phi\|_{p}+C\|f(u(t))\|_{q}\|\nabla \phi\|_{p} \\
& \leq C\|\nabla \phi\|_{p}\left(\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}+\left\|\nabla u_{t}(t)\right\|_{p}^{p-1}+\|f(u(t))\|_{q}\right) \tag{2.2.5}
\end{align*}
$$

for all $\phi \in \mathrm{W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$. Therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|u_{t t}(t)\right\|_{\mathrm{W}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)} \leq C\left(\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}+\left\|\nabla u_{t}(t)\right\|_{p}^{p-1}+\|f(u(t))\|_{q}\right) \text { a.e. }[0, T] . \tag{2.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence,

$$
\begin{align*}
&\left\|u_{t t}\right\|_{L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)\right)}^{p^{\prime}} \leq C \int_{0}^{T}\left(\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}+\left\|\nabla u_{t}(t)\right\|_{p}^{p-1}+\|f(u(t))\|_{q}\right)^{p^{\prime}} d t \\
& \leq C\left(\int_{0}^{T}\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{p^{\prime}} d t\right.+\int_{0}^{T}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(t)\right\|_{p}^{p} d t \\
&\left.+\int_{0}^{T}\|f(u(t))\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}} d t\right) \tag{2.2.7}
\end{align*}
$$

Because $1<p^{\prime} \leq 2, u \in C\left([0, T], \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right)$ and $u_{t} \in L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)$, the first two terms on the right-hand side of (2.2.7) are finite. As for the third term of (2.2.7), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{T}\|f(u(t))\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}} d t & \leq C\left(\int_{0}^{T}\|f(u(t))-f(0)\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}} d t+\int_{0}^{T}\|f(0)\|_{q}^{p^{\prime}} d t\right) \\
& \leq C_{f} \int_{0}^{T}\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{p^{\prime}} d t+C_{f, T}<\infty \tag{2.2.8}
\end{align*}
$$

where we have used the fact that $f: \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{q}(\Omega)$ is locally lipschitz (see Lemma 2.1.3). Hence, $u_{t t} \in L^{p^{\prime}}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega)\right)$.

Now, because $u_{t}(t) \in \mathrm{W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$ a.e. $[0, T]$, we can replace $\phi$ by $u_{t}(t)$ in (2.2.4) to obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle u_{t t}(t), u_{t}(t)\right\rangle=-\frac{1}{2} \int_{\Omega} \frac{d}{d t}|\nabla u(t)|^{2} d x-\left\|\nabla u_{t}(t)\right\|_{p}^{p}+\int_{\Omega} \frac{d}{d t} F(u(t)) d x \tag{2.2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

for almost all $t \in[0, T]$. Employing Proposition 1.1.3 with $f=g=u_{t}, X=\mathrm{W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$, $X^{*}=\mathrm{W}^{-1, p^{\prime}}(\Omega), H=L^{2}(\Omega), \alpha=\beta=p$ and $\alpha^{\prime}=\beta^{\prime}=p^{\prime}$, we conclude that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{2} \frac{d}{d t}\left\|u_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}=\left\langle u_{t t}(t), u_{t}(t)\right\rangle, \quad \text { a.e. }[0, T] \tag{2.2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{2}\left(\left\|u_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}-\left\|u_{t}(0)\right\|_{2}^{2}\right)=\int_{0}^{t}\left\langle u_{t t}(s), u_{t}(s)\right\rangle d s \quad \text { for all } t \in[0, T] \tag{2.2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Integrating (2.2.9) from 0 to $t$ and using (2.2.11) we obtain,

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{1}{2}\left(\left\|u_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}-\left\|u_{t}(0)\right\|_{2}^{2}\right) & =-\frac{1}{2}\left(\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}-\|\nabla u(0)\|_{2}^{2}\right)-\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d x d s \\
& +\int_{\Omega} F(u(t)) d x-\int_{\Omega} F(u(0)) d x \tag{2.2.12}
\end{align*}
$$

Rearranging the terms in (2.2.12) and recalling the definition of $E(s)$ gives the energy identity (2.2.1).

## Chapter 3

## Uniqueness of Weak Solutions

This chapter is devoted to the proof of the uniqueness statement in Theorem 1.2.1. Precisely, we aim to prove the following proposition.

### 3.1 Proof of Uniqueness

Proposition 3.1.1. Given the validity of Assumption 1.1.1, and assuming that $u_{0} \in$ $L^{k}(\Omega)$, if $r \geq 5$, where $k=\frac{3(r-1)}{2}$, local weak solutions to (1.0.1) are unique.

Proof. Suppose that $u$ and $v$ are weak solutions to (1.0.1) on $[0, T]$ in the sense of Definition 1.1.4. Let $\tilde{u}:=u-v$. We aim to show that $\tilde{u}=0$. Observe that because $u$ and $v$ are weak solutions, then $\tilde{u} \in C\left([0, T], \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right)$ and $\tilde{u}_{t} \in C\left([0, T], L^{2}(\Omega)\right) \cap$ $L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)$. Thus, there exists $R>0$ such that for all $t \in[0, T]$,

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2},\|\nabla v(t)\|_{2},\left\|u_{t}(t)\right\|_{2},\left\|v_{t}(t)\right\|_{2} \leq R  \tag{3.1.1}\\
\int_{0}^{T}\left\|\nabla u_{t}\right\|_{p}^{p} d x d t, \int_{0}^{T}\left\|\nabla v_{t}\right\|_{p}^{p} d x d t \leq R
\end{array}\right.
$$

Let us note here that $\tilde{u}$ satisfies the problem

$$
\begin{cases}\tilde{u}_{t t}-\Delta \tilde{u}-\Delta_{p} u_{t}+\Delta_{p} v_{t}=f(u)-f(v) & \text { in } \Omega \times(0, T)  \tag{3.1.2}\\ \tilde{u}=0 & \text { on } \Gamma \times(0, T) \\ \tilde{u}(0)=\tilde{u}_{t}(0)=0 . & \text { in } \Omega\end{cases}
$$

Furthermore, as $u$ and $v$ satisfy their corresponding energy identities (2.2.1), $\tilde{u}$ does as well. That is, $\tilde{u}$ satisfies:

$$
\begin{gather*}
\tilde{\tilde{E}}(t)+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(\left|\nabla u_{t}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}-\left|\nabla v_{t}\right|^{p-2} \nabla v_{t}\right) \cdot \nabla \tilde{u}_{t} d x d s \\
=\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}(f(u)-f(v)) \tilde{u}_{t} d x d s \tag{3.1.3}
\end{gather*}
$$

for all $t \in[0, T]$, where $\tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t):=\frac{1}{2}\left(\left\|\tilde{u}_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\|\nabla \tilde{u}(t)\|_{2}^{2}\right)$. Recalling the monotonicity property (2.1.6) of the $p$-Laplacian, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t) \leq \int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}(f(u)-f(v)) \tilde{u}_{t} d x d s, \text { for all } t \in[0, T] \tag{3.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

As in [9], our main goal is to estimate the term due to the source. We start with the simple case when $f: \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{2}(\Omega)$ is locally Lipschitz (i.e., when $1 \leq r \leq 3$ ). For these values of $r$, we have by the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality and Young's inequality,

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}(f(u)-f(v)) \tilde{u}_{t} d x d s\right| & \leq \int_{0}^{t}\|f(u)-f(v)\|_{2}\left\|\tilde{u}_{t}\right\|_{2} d s \\
& \leq \frac{1}{2} L_{f} \int_{0}^{t}\left(\|\nabla(\tilde{u})\|_{2}^{2}+\left\|\tilde{u}_{t}\right\|_{2}^{2}\right) d s \\
& =L_{f} \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(s) d s \tag{3.1.5}
\end{align*}
$$

Now, for $r>3$ we recall Assumption 1.1.1, namely, we further require that $f \in C^{2}(\mathbb{R})$
and $\left|f^{\prime \prime}(u)\right| \leq c_{2}|u|^{r-2}$ for all $|u| \geq 1$. This yields the following growth conditions on $f$ :

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\left|f^{\prime}(u)\right| \leq c_{1}|u|^{r-1}, \quad|f(u)| \leq c_{0}|u|^{r}, \text { for }|u| \geq 1  \tag{3.1.6}\\
\left|f^{\prime}(u)-f^{\prime}(v)\right| \leq C|u-v|\left(|u|^{r-2}+|v|^{r-2}+1\right), \quad u, v \in \mathbb{R} \\
|f(u)-f(v)| \leq C|u-v|\left(|u|^{r-1}+|v|^{r-1}+1\right), \quad u, v \in \mathbb{R}
\end{array}\right.
$$

Integration by parts, the bounds in (3.1.6), and the fact that $\tilde{u}(0)=0$ yield

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}(f(u)-f(v)) \tilde{u}_{t} d x d s\right| \\
& \quad \leq\left|\int_{\Omega}(f(u(t))-f(v(t))) \tilde{u}(t) d x\right|+\left|\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(f^{\prime}(u) u_{t}-f^{\prime}(v) v_{t}\right) \tilde{u} d x d s\right| \\
& \quad \leq C \int_{\Omega}|\tilde{u}(t)|^{2}\left(|u(t)|^{r-1}+|v(t)|^{r-1}+1\right) d x+\left|\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f^{\prime}(u) \tilde{u} \tilde{u}_{t} d x d s\right| \\
& \quad+\left|\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(f^{\prime}(u)-f^{\prime}(v)\right) v_{t} \tilde{u} d x d s\right| \\
& \quad \leq C \int_{\Omega}|\tilde{u}(t)|^{2}\left(|u(t)|^{r-1}+|v(t)|^{r-1}+1\right) d x+\frac{1}{2}\left|\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f^{\prime}(u) \frac{d}{d t}(\tilde{u})^{2} d x d s\right| \\
& \quad+C \int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(|u|^{r-2}+|v|^{r-2}+1\right)\left|v_{t}\right||\tilde{u}|^{2} d x d s . \tag{3.1.7}
\end{align*}
$$

One more integration by parts in (3.1.7) yields

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}(f(u)-f(v)) \tilde{u}_{t} d x d s\right| \\
& \quad \leq C \int_{\Omega}|\tilde{u}(t)|^{2}\left(|u(t)|^{r-1}+|v(t)|^{r-1}+1\right) d x+\frac{1}{2}\left|\int_{\Omega} f^{\prime}(u(t)) \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x\right| \\
& \quad+C \int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(|u|^{r-2}+|v|^{r-2}+1\right)\left|v_{t}\right||\tilde{u}|^{2} d x d s+\frac{1}{2}\left|\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f^{\prime \prime}(u) u_{t} \tilde{u}^{2} d x d s\right| \\
& \quad \leq C\left[\int_{\Omega}|\tilde{u}(t)|^{2}\left(|u(t)|^{r-1}+|v(t)|^{r-1}+1\right) d x+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} \tilde{u}^{2}\left(\left|u_{t}\right|+\left|v_{t}\right|\right) d x d s\right. \\
& \left.\quad+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(|u|^{r-2}+|v|^{r-2}\right)\left(\left|u_{t}\right|+\left|v_{t}\right|\right)|\tilde{u}|^{2} d x d s\right] \tag{3.1.8}
\end{align*}
$$

Our task here is to estimate each term on the right-hand side of (3.1.8).

1. Estimate for $\int_{\Omega}|\tilde{u}(t)|^{2} d x$ : First, notice that the regularity of $\tilde{u}$ and the fact that $\tilde{u}(0)=0$ allow us to write

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{\Omega}|\tilde{u}(t)|^{2} d x & =\int_{\Omega}\left|\int_{0}^{t} \tilde{u}_{t}(s) d s\right|^{2} d x \leq \int_{\Omega} \int_{0}^{t}\left|\tilde{u}_{t}(s)\right|^{2} d s \cdot t d x \\
& \leq T \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\tilde{u}_{t}(s)\right\|_{2}^{2} d s \leq 2 T \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(s) d s \tag{3.1.9}
\end{align*}
$$

2. Estimate for $\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} \tilde{u}^{2}\left|u_{t}\right| d x d s$ and $\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} \tilde{u}^{2}\left|v_{t}\right| d x d s$ : Using Hölder's inequality with 3 and $\frac{3}{2}$, the imbedding in (1.1.1), and (3.1.1), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} \tilde{u}^{2}\left|u_{t}\right| d x d s & \leq \int_{0}^{t}\|\tilde{u}(s)\|_{6}^{2}\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{3 / 2} d s \\
& \leq C \int_{0}^{t}\|\nabla \tilde{u}(s)\|_{2}^{2}\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{2} d s \leq C R \int_{0}^{t}\|\nabla \tilde{u}(s)\|_{2}^{2} d s \\
& \leq C_{R} \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(s) d s \tag{3.1.10}
\end{align*}
$$

Similarly, $\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} \tilde{u}^{2}\left|v_{t}\right| d x d s \leq C_{R} \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(s) d s$.
3. Estimate for $\int_{\Omega}|\tilde{u}(t)|^{2}\left(|u(t)|^{r-1}+|v(t)|^{r-1}\right) d x$ : Here, both terms are estimated in the same manner. We have,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\Omega}|\tilde{u}(t)|^{2}|u(t)|^{r-1} d x \leq\|\tilde{u}\|_{2}^{2}+\int_{\Omega_{t}^{\prime}}|u(t)|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x \tag{3.1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Omega_{t}^{\prime}=\{x \in \Omega:|u(t)|>1\}$. The first term on the right hand side of (3.1.11) was estimated in (3.1.9). As for the second term, we consider two cases.

Case 1: $3<r<5$. Given that $|u(t)|>1$ on $\Omega_{t}^{\prime}$, there exists $\epsilon_{0}>0$ (say, $\epsilon_{0}=$ $\left.\frac{1}{2}(5-r)\right)$, such that $|u(t)|^{r-1} \leq|u(t)|^{4-\epsilon_{0}}$ on $\Omega_{t}^{\prime}$. Now, choose $0<\epsilon<\epsilon_{0} / 4$. By Hölder's inequality with $\frac{3}{2(1-\epsilon)}$ and $\frac{3}{1+2 \epsilon}$, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{\Omega_{t}^{\prime}}|u(t)|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x & \leq \int_{\Omega_{t}^{\prime}}|u(t)|^{4-\epsilon_{0}} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x \\
& \leq\|u(t)\|_{\left(4-\epsilon_{0}\right) \frac{3}{2(1-\epsilon)}}^{\left(4-\epsilon_{0}\right.}\|\tilde{u}(t)\|_{\frac{6}{1+2 \epsilon}}^{2} \tag{3.1.12}
\end{align*}
$$

Now, notice that because $\epsilon<\epsilon_{0} / 4$, we find that $\frac{3\left(4-\epsilon_{0}\right)}{2(1-\epsilon)}<6$. Also, because both $\tilde{u}(t)$ and $u(t)$ are in $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)$, we have,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\Omega_{t}^{\prime}}|u(t)|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x \leq C\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{\left(4-\epsilon_{0}\right)}\|\tilde{u}(t)\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)}^{2} \tag{3.1.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we have used the imbeddings $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow L^{6}(\Omega)$ and $\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow L^{\frac{6}{1+2 \epsilon}}(\Omega)$ for $0<\epsilon<1$. It follows from a standard interpolation inequality combined with Young's inequality that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|w\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)}^{2} \leq \epsilon\|\nabla w\|_{2}^{2}+C_{\epsilon}\|w\|_{2}^{2} \tag{3.1.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $w \in \mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)$ and any $0<\epsilon<1$. Recalling that $\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2} \leq R$ for all $t \in[0, T]$,
we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{\Omega_{t}^{\prime}}|u(t)|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x & \leq C_{R}\left(\epsilon\|\nabla \tilde{u}(t)\|_{2}^{2}+C_{\epsilon}\|\tilde{u}(t)\|_{2}^{2}\right) \\
& \leq C_{R}\left(\epsilon \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t)+C_{\epsilon}\|\tilde{u}(t)\|_{2}^{2}\right) \tag{3.1.15}
\end{align*}
$$

Finally, applying the estimate (3.1.9) to the second term of (3.1.15) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\Omega_{t}^{\prime}}|u(t)|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x \leq C_{R}\left(\epsilon \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t)+2 C_{\epsilon} T \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(s) d s\right) . \tag{3.1.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Case 2: $r \geq 5$. Here, recall the additional assumption that $u_{0} \in H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \cap L^{k}(\Omega)$, where $k=\frac{3}{2}(r-1)$. Because $C_{0}^{\infty}(\Omega)$ dense in $L^{k}(\Omega)$, there exists a function $\phi \in C_{0}^{\infty}(\Omega)$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|u_{0}-\phi\right\|_{k} \leq \eta^{\frac{1}{r-1}} \tag{3.1.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\eta>0$ will be chosen below. Now,

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{\Omega}|u(t)|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x \leq C\left(\int_{\Omega}\left|u(t)-u_{0}\right|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x\right. & +\int_{\Omega}\left|u_{0}-\phi\right|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x \\
& \left.+\int_{\Omega}|\phi|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x\right) \tag{3.1.18}
\end{align*}
$$

Hölder's inequality and the Sobolev Imbedding Theorem yield

$$
\begin{align*}
& \int_{\Omega}|u(t)|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x \leq C\left(\left\|u(t)-u_{0}\right\|_{k}^{r-1}\|\tilde{u}(t)\|_{6}^{2}\right. \\
&\left.+\left\|u_{0}-\phi\right\|_{k}^{r-1}\|\tilde{u}(t)\|_{6}^{2}+\int_{\Omega}|\phi|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x\right) \\
& \leq C\left(\left\|u(t)-u_{0}\right\|_{k}^{r-1}+\left\|u_{0}-\phi\right\|_{k}^{r-1}\right) \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t)+\int_{\Omega}|\phi|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x \tag{3.1.19}
\end{align*}
$$

Consider the first term on the right-hand side of (3.1.19). The regularity of $u$, namely, $u \in C\left([0, T], \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right), u_{t} \in C\left([0, T], L^{2}(\Omega)\right) \cap L^{p}\left(0, T, \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)\right)$, implies that $\nabla u, \nabla u_{t} \in$ $L^{2}\left(0, T, L^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}$. This allows us to write

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla\left(u(t)-u_{0}\right)=\int_{0}^{t} \nabla u_{t}(s) d s, \text { a.e. } \Omega \times[0, T] . \tag{3.1.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also, recall the definition of $q$ and $q^{\prime}$ in (1.1.2). We slightly modify the choice of $q^{\prime}$ as follows. Choose $q^{\prime}$ sufficiently large so that $k \leq q^{\prime}$ when $p \geq 3$. For the values of $p \in[2,3)$, note the restriction $r<8-\frac{6}{p}$ automatically implies that $k \leq q^{\prime}$. Therefore, with this choice of $q^{\prime}$, and by using (1.1.3), (3.1.20), we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|u(t)-u_{0}\right\|_{k}^{p} & \leq C\left\|u(t)-u_{0}\right\|_{q^{\prime}}^{p} \leq C\left\|\nabla\left(u(t)-u_{0}\right)\right\|_{p}^{p}=C \int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla\left(u(t)-u_{0}\right)\right|^{p} d x \\
& =C \int_{\Omega}\left|\int_{0}^{t} \nabla u_{t}(s) d s\right|^{p} d x \leq C \int_{\Omega} \int_{0}^{t}\left|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right|^{p} t^{p-1} d s d x \tag{3.1.21}
\end{align*}
$$

Given $\int_{0}^{T}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s \leq R$, we have,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|u(t)-u_{0}\right\|_{k}^{r-1} \leq C t^{\frac{p-1}{p}(r-1)} R^{\frac{r-1}{p}} \leq T^{\frac{r-1}{p^{\prime}}} C_{R} \tag{3.1.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $t \in[0, T]$. Because $\phi \in C_{0}^{\infty}(\Omega)$, the third term on the right-hand side of (3.1.19) is estimated by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\Omega}|\phi|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x \leq C_{\eta} \int_{\Omega} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x \leq T C_{\eta} \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(s) d s \tag{3.1.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we have used (3.1.9). Recalling that $\left\|u_{0}-\phi\right\|_{k}^{r-1}<\eta$, it follows from (3.1.19),
(3.1.22), and (3.1.23) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\Omega}|u(t)|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x \leq\left(T^{\frac{r-1}{p^{\prime}}} C_{R}+C \eta\right) \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t)+T C_{\eta} \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(s) d s \tag{3.1.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\eta>0$ is arbitrary. A similar estimate holds for $\int_{\Omega}|v(t)|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x$. Combining Cases 1 and 2 with (3.1.9), we obtain,

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{\Omega}|\tilde{u}(t)|^{2}\left(|u(t)|^{r-1}+|v(t)|^{r-1}+1\right) d x & \leq\left(\epsilon C_{R}+T^{\frac{r-1}{p^{\prime}}} C_{R}+C \eta\right) \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t) \\
& +T C_{\epsilon, \eta, R} \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(s) d s \tag{3.1.25}
\end{align*}
$$

4. Estimate for $\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(|u|^{r-2}+|v|^{r-2}\right)\left(\left|u_{t}\right|+\left|v_{t}\right|\right)|\tilde{u}|^{2} d x d s$ : Here it is enough to consider only one term because the other terms are estimated in the same manner. Using Hölder's inequality with 3 and $3 / 2$, and then again with $\frac{4}{r-2}$ and $\frac{4}{6-r}$, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}|u|^{r-2}\left|u_{t}\right||\tilde{u}|^{2} d x d s & \leq \int_{0}^{t}\|\tilde{u}(s)\|_{6}^{2}\left(\int_{\Omega}|u(s)|^{\frac{3(r-2)}{2}}\left|u_{t}(s)\right|^{\frac{3}{2}} d x\right)^{\frac{2}{3}} d s \\
& \leq \int_{0}^{t}\|\tilde{u}(s)\|_{6}^{2}\|u(s)\|_{6}^{r-2}\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{\frac{6}{6-r}} d s \tag{3.1.26}
\end{align*}
$$

Now notice that for the values of $p \in[2,3)$, our restriction $r<8-\frac{6}{p}$ is equivalent to $\frac{6}{6-r}<\frac{3 p}{3-p}$. Then, by the Sobolev imbeddings and using (1.1.3), it follows from (3.1.26) that

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}|u|^{r-2}\left|u_{t}\right||\tilde{u}|^{2} d x d s & \leq C \int_{0}^{t}\|\nabla \tilde{u}(s)\|_{2}^{2}\|\nabla u(s)\|_{2}^{r-2}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p} d s \\
& \leq C_{R} \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(s)\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p} d s \tag{3.1.27}
\end{align*}
$$

where we have used the fact that $\|\nabla u(s)\|_{2} \leq R$ for each $0 \leq s \leq T$. Accounting for
the remaining terms in this step, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(|u|^{r-2}+|v|^{r-2}\right) & \left(\left|u_{t}\right|+\left|v_{t}\right|\right)|\tilde{u}|^{2} d x d s \\
& \leq C_{R} \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(s)\left(\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+\left\|\nabla v_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}\right) d s \tag{3.1.28}
\end{align*}
$$

Combining (3.1.5), (3.1.9)-(3.1.10), (3.1.25), and (3.1.28), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
&\left|\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}(f(u)-f(v)) \tilde{u}_{t} d x d s\right| \leq\left(\epsilon C_{R}+T^{\frac{1}{p^{\prime}}(r-1)} C_{R}+C \eta\right) \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t) \\
&+C_{T, \epsilon, \eta, R} \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(s)\left(\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+\left\|\nabla v_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+1\right) d s \tag{3.1.29}
\end{align*}
$$

Hence, it follows from (3.1.4) and (3.1.29) that

$$
\begin{align*}
\tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t) & \leq\left(\epsilon C_{R}+T^{\frac{1}{p^{\prime}(r-1)}} C_{R}+C \eta\right) \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t) \\
& +C_{T, \epsilon, \eta, R} \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(s)\left(\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+\left\|\nabla v_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+1\right) d s . \tag{3.1.30}
\end{align*}
$$

We can choose $\epsilon>0, \eta>0$ and $T$ sufficiently small ${ }^{1}$ so that $\epsilon_{0}:=\epsilon C_{R}+T^{\frac{1}{p^{\prime}(r-1)}} C_{R}+$ $C \eta<1$. Then (3.1.30) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t) \leq C_{T, \epsilon, \eta, R} \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}(s)\left(\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+\left\|\nabla v_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+1\right) d s \tag{3.1.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Because $\left(\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+\left\|\nabla v_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+1\right) \in L^{1}[0, T]$, Gronwall's inequality yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\mathscr{E}}(t)=0, \text { for } t \in[0, T] \tag{3.1.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

which completes the proof of the uniqueness statement in Theorem 1.2.1.

[^3]
## Chapter 4

## Global Existence

This chapter is devoted to the proofs of Theorem 1.2.2, Corollary 1.2.3 and Theorem 1.2.4.

### 4.1 Damping Exponent Dominates Source

In this section we prove the global existence of solutions to (1.0.1), as well as the continuous dependence of solutions on initial data.

### 4.1.1 Proof of First Global Existence Result

Here, we use a standard continuation argument to conclude that $u$, the weak solution of (1.0.1), is a global solution or else, for some $0<T<\infty$, one has

$$
\begin{equation*}
\limsup _{t \rightarrow T^{-}} E_{1}(t)=+\infty \tag{4.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathscr{E}(t)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\left\|u_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}\right)+\frac{1}{r+1}\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1}$. Our goal is to show the latter cannot happen under the assumptions of Theorem 1.2.2. Indeed, this assertion is
contained in the following proposition.
Proposition 4.1.1. Let $u$ be a weak solution to (1.0.1) on $[0, T]$ as furnished by Theorem 1.2.1 and assume that $u_{0} \in L^{r+1}(\Omega)$ whenever $r>5$. We have

- if $r \leq p-1$, then for all $t \in[0, T]$, u satisfies:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{E}(t)+\frac{1}{r+1}\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1}+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}\right\|_{p}^{p} d s \leq C_{T}\left(\left\|u_{0}\right\|_{H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \cap L^{r+1}(\Omega)},\left\|u_{1}\right\|_{L^{2}(\Omega)}\right) \tag{4.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $T>0$ is arbitrary.

- If $r>p-1$, then the bound in (4.1.2) holds for $0 \leq t \leq T<T_{0}$, for some $T_{0}>0$ where $T_{0}$ may be finite and depends on $\left\|u_{0}\right\|_{H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \cap L^{r+1}(\Omega)}$ and $\left\|u_{1}\right\|_{L^{2}(\Omega)}$.

Proof. As in [7, 10], we introduce the modified energy

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{1}(t):=\mathscr{E}(t)+\frac{1}{r+1}\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1} \tag{4.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathscr{E}(t)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\left\|u_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}\right)$. Recalling the energy identity (1.2.1) we note that $E_{1}(t)$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{1}(t)+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}\right\|_{p}^{p} d s=E_{1}(0)+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f(u) u_{t} d x d s+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}|u|^{r-1} u u_{t} d x d s \tag{4.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

First, we note that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f(u) u_{t} d x d s\right| \leq C\left(\left|Q_{t}\right|+\int_{0}^{t} E_{1}(s) d s+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}|u|^{r}\left|u_{t}\right| d x d s\right) \tag{4.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $Q_{t}=\Omega \times(0, t)$ and $\left|Q_{t}\right|$ denotes its Lebesgue measure. To see this, put $Q_{t}^{\prime}:=\{(x, s) \in \Omega \times(0, t):|u(x, s)| \leq 1\}$ and $Q_{t}^{\prime \prime}:=\{(x, s) \in \Omega \times(0, t):|u(x, s)|>1\}$.

Because $f$ is continuous, $f(u)$ is bounded on $Q_{t}^{\prime}$ for each $0 \leq t \leq T$. Consequently, after using Young's inequality, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f(u) u_{t} d x d s\right| & \leq \int_{Q_{t}^{\prime}}\left|f(u) u_{t}\right| d x d s+\int_{Q_{t}^{\prime \prime}}\left|f(u) u_{t}\right| d x d s \\
& \leq C\left(\int_{Q_{t}^{\prime}}\left|u_{t}\right| d x d s+\int_{Q_{t}^{\prime \prime}}|u|^{r}\left|u_{t}\right| d x d s\right) \\
& \leq C\left(\int_{Q_{t}^{\prime}}\left|u_{t}\right|^{2} d x d s+\left|Q_{t}^{\prime}\right|+\int_{Q_{t}^{\prime \prime}}|u|^{r}\left|u_{t}\right| d x d s\right) \\
& \leq C\left(\int_{0}^{t} E_{1}(s) d s+\left|Q_{t}\right|+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}|u|^{r}\left|u_{t}\right| d x d s\right) \tag{4.1.6}
\end{align*}
$$

for all $t \in[0, T]$. We now estimate $\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}|u|^{r}\left|u_{t}\right| d x d s$. Recalling the definition of $q$ in (1.1.2), it is easy to check that under Assumption 1.1.1 we have $q r \leq r+1$. By Hölder's inequality with $q$ and $q^{\prime}$ followed by the Sobolev imbeddings in (1.1.3), we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}|u|^{r}\left|u_{t}\right| d x d s \leq \int_{0}^{t}\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{q^{\prime}}\|u(s)\|_{q r}^{r} d s & \leq C \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}\|u(s)\|_{q r}^{r} d s \\
& \leq C \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}\|u(s)\|_{r+1}^{r} d s \tag{4.1.7}
\end{align*}
$$

By Young's inequality we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}|u|^{r}\left|u_{t}\right| d x d s \leq \epsilon \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s+C_{\epsilon} \int_{0}^{t}\|u(s)\|_{r+1}^{r p^{\prime}} d s \tag{4.1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $r=p-1$, then $r p^{\prime}=r+1$ and we have the estimate in (4.1.9) below. Otherwise, $r<p-1$ and, in this case, it is clear that $\frac{r+1}{r p^{\prime}}>1$. Thus, we may apply Young's inequality to the integrand of the second term in (4.1.8) with $\frac{r+1}{r p^{\prime}}$ and $\frac{(p-1)(r+1)}{p-r-1}$ to
get

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}|u|^{r}\left|u_{t}\right| d x d s & \leq \epsilon \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s+C_{1} \int_{0}^{t}\|u(s)\|_{r+1}^{r+1} d s+C_{1}^{\prime} \\
& \leq \epsilon \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s+C_{1} \int_{0}^{t} E_{1}(s) d s+C_{1}^{\prime} \tag{4.1.9}
\end{align*}
$$

where $C_{1}^{\prime}$ depends on $t$. Now, returning to (4.1.4) and using (4.1.5) and (4.1.9) we conclude that

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{1}(t)+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}\right\|_{p}^{p} d s \leq C_{2}+C_{0} \int_{0}^{t} E_{1}(s) d s+\epsilon C \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d x d s \tag{4.1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C_{2}=C\left(t,|\Omega|, \epsilon, r, E_{1}(0)\right)$. Choosing $\epsilon>0$ sufficiently small, (4.1.10) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{1}(t)+\frac{1}{2} \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}\right\|_{p}^{p} d s \leq C_{2}+C_{0} \int_{0}^{t} E_{1}(s) d s \tag{4.1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

and by Gronwall's inequality, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{1}(t) \leq C_{2} e^{C_{0} T} \tag{4.1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $0 \leq t \leq T$, and (4.1.2) follows from (4.1.11).

When $r>p-1$, we use (4.1.7). Because $q r<6$, by assumption (when $p=3$ we may choose $\delta>0$ sufficiently small so that $q r=(1+\delta) r<6$ ), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}|u|^{r}\left|u_{t}\right| d x d s & \leq \int_{0}^{t}\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{q^{\prime}}\|u(s)\|_{q r}^{r} d s \\
& \leq C \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}\|\nabla u(s)\|_{2}^{r} d s \tag{4.1.13}
\end{align*}
$$

Therefore, instead of (4.1.9), we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}|u|^{r}\left|u_{t}\right| d x d s & \leq \epsilon \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d x d s+C_{\epsilon} \int_{0}^{t}\|\nabla u(s)\|_{2}^{r^{\prime}} d x d s \\
& \leq \epsilon \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d x d s+C_{\epsilon} \int_{0}^{t} E_{1}(s)^{\frac{r p^{\prime}}{2}} d x d s \tag{4.1.14}
\end{align*}
$$

By choosing $\epsilon>0$ sufficiently small and combining (4.1.4), (4.1.5), (4.1.14), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{1}(t)+\frac{1}{2} \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}\right\|_{p}^{p} d s \leq C_{2}+C^{\prime} \int_{0}^{t}\left(E_{1}(s)+E_{1}(s)^{\frac{r p^{\prime}}{2}}\right) d s \tag{4.1.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $C_{2}=C\left(T,|\Omega|, \epsilon, r, E_{1}(0)\right)$. Now, Put

$$
Y(t)=1+E_{1}(t)
$$

and notice that $\frac{r p^{\prime}}{2}>1$, since $r>p-1$ and $p \geq 2$. Therefore, it follows from (4.1.15) that,

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y(t)+\frac{1}{2} \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}\right\|_{p}^{p} d s \leq C_{3}+2 C^{\prime} \int_{0}^{t} Y(s)^{\frac{r p^{\prime}}{2}} d s \tag{4.1.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

In particular,

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y(t) \leq C_{3}+2 C^{\prime} \int_{0}^{t} Y(s)^{\sigma} d s \tag{4.1.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\sigma:=\frac{r p^{\prime}}{2}>1$. By using a standard comparison theorem (e.g., [18]), then (4.1.17) yields that $Y(t) \leq z(t)$, where $z(t)=\left[C_{3}^{1-\sigma}-2 C^{\prime}(\sigma-1) t\right]^{-\frac{1}{\sigma-1}}$ is the solution of the Volterra integral equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
z(t)=C_{3}+2 C^{\prime} \int_{0}^{t} z(s)^{\sigma} d s \tag{4.1.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Although $z(t)$ blows up in a finite time $T_{0}>0$ (since $\sigma>1$ ), nonetheless, whenever $0<T<T_{0}$, then $Y(t) \leq z(t) \leq C_{T}\left(\left\|u_{0}\right\|_{H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \cap L^{r+1}(\Omega)},\left\|u_{1}\right\|_{L^{2}(\Omega)}\right)$ for all $t \in[0, T]$. Hence, the proof of the proposition is complete.

### 4.1.2 Continuous Dependence on Initial Data

We now provide the proof of Corollary 1.2.3, which follows from the energy identity, uniqueness of solutions and the bounds given in Proposition 4.1.1.

Proof. As in the proof of uniqueness, let $\left(u_{0}, u_{1}\right) \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \times L^{2}(\Omega)$, when $1 \leq r \leq 5$, or $\left(u_{0}, u_{1}\right) \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \cap L^{k}(\Omega) \times L^{2}(\Omega)$, when $r>5$, where $k=\frac{3}{2}(r-1)$. Let $\left\{\left(u_{0}^{n}, u_{1}^{n}\right)\right\} \subset$ $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \times L^{2}(\Omega)$ be a sequence of initial data such that, as $n \rightarrow \infty$,

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\left(u_{0}^{n}, u_{1}^{n}\right) \longrightarrow\left(u_{0}, u_{1}\right) \text { in } \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \times L^{2}(\Omega), \text { if } 1 \leq r \leq 5,  \tag{4.1.19}\\
\left(u_{0}^{n}, u_{1}^{n}\right) \longrightarrow\left(u_{0}, u_{1}\right) \text { in } \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \cap L^{k}(\Omega) \times L^{2}(\Omega), \text { if } r>5 .
\end{array}\right.
$$

Let $\left\{u^{n}\right\}$ and $u$ be the unique solutions to (1.0.1), in the sense of Definition 1.1.4, corresponding to the initial data $\left\{\left(u_{0}^{n}, u_{1}^{n}\right)\right\}$ and $\left\{\left(u_{0}, u_{1}\right)\right\}$, respectively. We first point out that, when $r>5$, our assumption (4.1.19) implies that $u_{0}^{n}, u_{0} \in L^{r+1}(\Omega)$, which is required in Proposition 4.1.1. Therefore, in view of Proposition 4.1.1 and (4.1.19), there exists a constant $R>0$ such that, for all $n \in \mathbb{N}$

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2},\left\|\nabla u^{n}(t)\right\|_{2},\left\|u_{t}(t)\right\|_{2},\left\|u_{t}^{n}(t)\right\|_{2} \leq R  \tag{4.1.20}\\
\int_{0}^{T}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d x d t, \int_{0}^{T}\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{n}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d t \leq R
\end{array}\right.
$$

for all $t \in[0, T]$, where $T>0$ can be chosen arbitrarily large if $r \leq p-1$ and is chosen sufficiently small, if $r>p-1$.

As in the proof of uniqueness of solutions, put $\tilde{u}(t):=u(t)-u^{n}(t)$ (suppressing the dependence on $n$ and with $v$ is being replaced by $u^{n}$ ). Then, as in (3.1.3), accounting for the now non-zero initial data, $\tilde{u}$ satisfies:

$$
\begin{align*}
\tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(t) & +\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(\left|\nabla u_{t}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}-\left|\nabla u_{t}^{n}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{n}\right) \cdot \nabla \tilde{u} d x d s \\
& =\tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(0)+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(f(u)-f\left(u^{n}\right)\right) \tilde{u}_{t} d x d s \tag{4.1.21}
\end{align*}
$$

for all $t \in[0, T]$, where $\tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(t):=\frac{1}{2}\left(\left\|\tilde{u}_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\|\nabla \tilde{u}(t)\|_{2}^{2}\right)$. Our goal here is to prove that $\tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(t) \longrightarrow 0$ uniformly on $[0, T]$, where $T>0$ is arbitrarily large (but fixed), if $r \leq p-1$, or $T>0$ is chosen sufficiently small if $r>p-1$.

Now, similar to (3.1.4), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(t) \leq \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(0)+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(f(u)-f\left(u^{n}\right)\right) \tilde{u}_{t} d x d s, \text { for all } t \in[0, T] . \tag{4.1.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

We employ the same calculations as in the proof of uniqueness, but account for the extra terms contributed by the non-zero initial data. First, integration by parts in (3.1.7)-(3.1.8) yields two extra terms

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\int_{\Omega}\left(f\left(u_{0}\right)-f\left(u_{0}^{n}\right)\right) \tilde{u}(0) d x\right|+\frac{1}{2}\left|\int_{\Omega} f^{\prime}\left(u_{0}\right) \tilde{u}^{2}(0) d x\right| \tag{4.1.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

which must be added to the right hand side of (3.1.8). Using the properties of (3.1.6), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|\int_{\Omega}\left(f\left(u_{0}\right)-f\left(u_{0}^{n}\right)\right) \tilde{u}(0) d x\right| & +\frac{1}{2}\left|\int_{\Omega} f^{\prime}\left(u_{0}\right) \tilde{u}^{2}(0) d x\right| \\
& \leq C \int_{\Omega}|\tilde{u}(0)|^{2}\left(\left|u_{0}\right|^{r-1}+\left|u_{0}^{n}\right|^{r-1}+1\right) d x \tag{4.1.24}
\end{align*}
$$

Each term on the right-hand side of (4.1.24) is estimated in the manner that follows.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\Omega}|\tilde{u}(0)|^{2}\left|u_{0}^{n}\right|^{r-1} d x \leq\|\tilde{u}(0)\|_{6}^{2}\left\|u_{0}^{n}\right\|_{k}^{r-1} \leq C_{R} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(0) \tag{4.1.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we have used (4.1.19)-(4.1.20).
The non-zero initial data, $\tilde{u}(0) \neq 0$, also changes the estimates in (3.1.9). We find that

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{\Omega}|\tilde{u}(t)|^{2} d x & =\int_{\Omega}\left|\tilde{u}(0)+\int_{0}^{t} \tilde{u}_{t}(s) d s\right|^{2} d x \\
& \leq C\left(\|\tilde{u}(0)\|_{2}^{2}+\int_{\Omega} \int_{0}^{t}\left|\tilde{u}_{t}(s)\right|^{2} d s \cdot t d x\right) \\
& \leq C\left(\|\tilde{u}(0)\|_{2}^{2}+T \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(s) d s\right) \\
& \leq C\left(\tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(0)+T \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(s) d s\right) \tag{4.1.26}
\end{align*}
$$

Now, for the case $1 \leq r<5$, we can simply perform the estimates in (3.1.11) through (3.1.16). Accounting for (3.1.28) and the additional terms due to the nonzero initial data, we find

$$
\begin{align*}
\tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(t) & \leq C_{R} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(0)+\epsilon C_{R} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(t) \\
& +C_{R, T, \epsilon} \int_{0}^{t}\left(\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{n}(s)\right\|_{p}+\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+1\right) \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(s) d s \tag{4.1.27}
\end{align*}
$$

for all $t \in[0, T]$. By choosing $\epsilon=\frac{1}{2 C_{R}}$ and applying Gronwall's inequality we conclude that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(t) \leq C_{R, T, \epsilon} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(0) \exp \left(\int_{0}^{t}\left(\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{n}(s)\right\|_{p}+\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+1\right) d s\right) \tag{4.1.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $t \in[0, T]$. In light of (4.1.20), $\int_{0}^{t}\left(\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{n}(s)\right\|_{p}+\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+1\right) d s \leq C_{T, R}$, for all
$n \in \mathbb{N}$ and all $t \in[0, T]$. Because $\tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(0) \rightarrow 0, \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(t) \rightarrow 0$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$ for all $t \in[0, T]$. This establishes the continuous dependence of solutions on initial data in the case $1 \leq r<5$ without a restriction on $T$.

For the case $r \geq 5$, we must exercise caution in estimating the term $\int_{\Omega}\left(|u(t)|^{r-1}+\right.$ $\left.\left|u^{n}(t)\right|^{r-1}\right) \tilde{u}(t)^{2} d x$. The bound in (3.1.24) is still valid, but care should be taken in estimating the term $\int_{\Omega}\left|u^{n}(t)\right|^{r-1} \tilde{u}(t)^{2} d x$. Recall the choice of $\phi \in C_{0}^{\infty}(\Omega)$ such that,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|u_{0}-\phi\right\|_{k} \leq \eta^{\frac{1}{r-1}} \tag{4.1.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\eta>0$ is arbitrary. Indeed, as in (3.1.18)-(3.1.19), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \int_{\Omega}\left|u^{n}(t)\right|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x \leq C\left(\int_{\Omega}\left|u^{n}(t)-u_{0}^{n}\right|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x\right. \\
& \left.\quad+\int_{\Omega}\left|u_{0}^{n}-u_{0}\right|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x+\int_{\Omega}\left|u_{0}-\phi\right|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x+\int_{\Omega}|\phi|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x\right) \\
& \quad \leq C\left(\left\|u^{n}(t)-u_{0}^{n}\right\|_{k}^{r-1}+\left\|u_{0}^{n}-u_{0}\right\|_{k}^{r-1}\|+\| u_{0}-\phi \|_{k}^{r-1}\right) \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(t) \\
& \quad+\int_{\Omega}|\phi|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x \tag{4.1.30}
\end{align*}
$$

As in (3.1.20)-(3.1.22), we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|u^{n}(t)-u_{0}^{n}\right\|_{k}^{r-1} \leq T^{\frac{r-1}{p^{\prime}}} C_{R}, \quad t \in[0, T] \tag{4.1.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also, because $u_{0}^{n} \rightarrow u_{0}$ in $L^{k}(\Omega)$ by assumption,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|u_{0}^{n}-u_{0}\right\|_{k}^{r-1} \leq \eta \tag{4.1.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all sufficiently large $n$. Therefore, it follows from (4.1.30)-(4.1.32) and (4.1.26)
that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\Omega}|u(t)|^{r-1} \tilde{u}^{2}(t) d x \leq\left(T^{\frac{r-1}{p^{\prime}}} C_{R}+C \eta\right) \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(t)+C_{\eta}\left(\tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(0)+T \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(s) d s\right) \tag{4.1.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

The remaining estimates in the proof of uniqueness remain valid, and one finally obtains

$$
\begin{align*}
\tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(t) & \leq C_{R, \eta} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(0)+\left(\epsilon C_{R}+C_{R} T^{\frac{r-1}{p^{\prime}}}+C \eta\right) \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(t) \\
& +C_{T, \epsilon, \eta, R} \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(s)\left(\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{n}(s)\right\|_{p}+\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+1\right) d s \tag{4.1.34}
\end{align*}
$$

Again, we can choose $\epsilon>0, \eta>0$ and $T$ sufficiently small so that $\epsilon_{0}:=\epsilon C_{R}+$ $T^{\frac{p-1}{p}(r-1)} C_{R}+C \eta<1$. Then (4.1.34) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(t) \leq C_{R, \eta} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(0)+C_{T, \epsilon, \eta, R} \int_{0}^{t} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(s)\left(\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{n}(s)\right\|_{p}+\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+1\right) d s \tag{4.1.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Gronwall's inequality we conclude that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(t) \leq C_{T, \epsilon, \eta, R} \tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(0) \exp \left(\int_{0}^{t}\left(\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{n}(s)\right\|_{p}+\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+1\right) d s\right) \tag{4.1.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\int_{0}^{t}\left(\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{n}(s)\right\|_{p}+\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}+1\right) d s \leq C_{T, R}$, for all $n \in \mathbb{N}$, then $\tilde{\mathscr{E}}_{n}(t) \rightarrow 0$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$, for all $t \in[0, T]$, where $T>0$ is sufficiently small.

### 4.2 Global Existence via the Potential Well

In this section, we provide the global existence of solutions to (1.0.1) under different hypotheses than those considered in Theorem 1.2.2. We again use a standard continuation argument on the weak solution $u$ of (1.0.1) and show that it is not possible
for

$$
\begin{equation*}
\limsup _{t \rightarrow T^{-}} E_{1}(t)=+\infty \tag{4.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

to occur. However, in this section we will find a bound for the energy that is uniform in $t$ by examining solutions in the "good" part of the potential well.

Following the method of [3] and [11] we proceed in three steps. We begin by recalling the functional $J$, where

$$
\begin{equation*}
J(u)=\frac{1}{2}\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{r+1}\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1} \tag{4.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the potential well

$$
\mathcal{W}:=\left\{u \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega): J(u)<d\right\}
$$

which is divided into the two sets

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathcal{W}_{1}:=\left\{u \in \mathcal{W}:\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}>\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1}\right\} \cup\{0\} \\
& \mathcal{W}_{2}:=\left\{u \in \mathcal{W}:\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}<\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Step 1: $\mathcal{W}_{1}$ is invariant with respect to (1.0.1). Recall the energy identity given by Theorem 1.2.1,

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(t)+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s=E(0) \tag{4.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Differentiation with respect to $t$ implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
E^{\prime}(t) \leq 0 \tag{4.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Consequently

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(t) \leq E(0)<d, \quad \forall t \in[0, T) \tag{4.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

As a result, $J(u(t))<d$ for all $t \in[0, T)$. Hence $u(t) \in \mathcal{W}$ for all $t \in[0, T)$ since $J(u(t)) \leq E(t)$.

To show that $u(t) \in \mathcal{W}_{1}$ on $[0, T)$ we proceed by contradiction. Assume there exists $t_{0} \in[0, T)$ such that $u\left(t_{0}\right) \notin \mathcal{W}_{1}$. Since $\mathcal{W}=\mathcal{W}_{1} \cup \mathcal{W}_{2}$ and $\mathcal{W}_{1} \cap \mathcal{W}_{2}=\emptyset$, $u\left(t_{0}\right) \in \mathcal{W}_{2}$ and thus $\left\|\nabla u\left(t_{0}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2}<\left\|u\left(t_{0}\right)\right\|_{r+1}^{r+1}$. Because $u \in C\left([0, T], \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right)$ and $\mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow L^{r+1}(\Omega)$ (recall $\left.r+1 \leq 6\right),\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}-\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1}$ is continuous. Since $\|\nabla u(0)\|_{2}^{2}-\|u(0)\|_{r+1}^{r+1}>0$, as $u_{0} \in \mathcal{W}_{1}$, and $\left\|\nabla u\left(t_{0}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2}-\left\|u\left(t_{0}\right)\right\|_{r+1}^{r+1}<0$, it follows that there exists $s \in\left(0, t_{0}\right)$ such that $\|\nabla u(s)\|_{2}^{2}=\|u(s)\|_{r+1}^{r+1}$. Now, we define

$$
\begin{equation*}
t^{*}=\sup \left\{s \in\left(0, t_{0}\right):\|\nabla u(s)\|_{2}^{2}=\|u(s)\|_{r+1}^{r+1}\right\} \tag{4.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

In particular, $\left\|\nabla u\left(t^{*}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2}=\left\|u\left(t^{*}\right)\right\|_{r+1}^{r+1}$, and $u(t) \in \mathcal{W}_{2}$ for all $t^{*}<t \leq t_{0}$.
We consider two cases:
Case 1: Suppose that $\left\|\nabla u\left(t^{*}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2} \neq 0$. Then $u\left(t^{*}\right) \in \mathcal{N}$, the Nehari Manifold (see (1.1.10)). From (1.1.20) we know that $d$ is the infimum of $J$ over all functions $u$ in the Nehari Manifold and thus we have that $J\left(u\left(t^{*}\right)\right) \geq d$. Clearly, $E\left(t^{*}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left\|u_{t}\left(t^{*}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2}+$ $J\left(u\left(t^{*}\right)\right) \geq d$, contradicting (4.2.5).

Case 2: Suppose that $\left\|\nabla u\left(t^{*}\right)\right\|_{2}^{2}=0$. Since $u(t) \in \mathcal{W}_{2}$ for all $t^{*}<t \leq t_{0}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}<\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1}, \quad \text { for all } t^{*}<t \leq t_{0} \tag{4.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

By the regularity of $u$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{t \rightarrow t^{*+}}\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}=0 \tag{4.2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Applying the Sobolev Imbedding to (4.2.7) gives

$$
\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}<\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1} \leq C\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{r+1}, \quad \forall t^{*}<t \leq t_{0}
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}\left(1-C\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{r-1}\right)<0, \quad \forall t^{*}<t \leq t_{0} \tag{4.2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

and thus

$$
\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}>C^{\frac{1}{r-1}}, \quad \forall t^{*}<t \leq t_{0}
$$

contradicting (4.2.8). Thus, $u(t) \in \mathcal{W}_{1}$ for all $t \in[0, T)$ and $\mathcal{W}_{1}$ is invariant under (1.0.1).

Step 2: $\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}$ is controlled by the depth of the well. In particular, we will show that $\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}<2 d\left(\frac{r+1}{r-1}\right)$ for all $t \in[0, T)$. Since $E(t)<d$ and $u(t) \in \mathcal{W}_{1}$ on $[0, T)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
d>J(u(t))=\frac{1}{2}\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{r+1}\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1}>\frac{r-1}{2(r+1)}\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1}, \tag{4.2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $t \in[0, T)$, and thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1}<2 d\left(\frac{r+1}{r-1}\right), \quad \forall t \in[0, T) \tag{4.2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, because $J(u(t))<d$ for all $t \in[0, T)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{2}\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}<d+\frac{1}{r+1}\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1}<d+\frac{2 d}{r-1}=d\left(\frac{r+1}{r-1}\right) \tag{4.2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

on $[0, T)$, thus concluding Step 2.
Step 3: The solution is a global solution. Rearranging the terms in the energy identity gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{E}(t)+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s=E(0)+\frac{1}{r+1}\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1} . \tag{4.2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, for all $t \in[0, T)$, by (4.2.11) implies

$$
\mathscr{E}(t)+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s<d+\frac{2 d}{r-1}=d\left(\frac{r+1}{r-1}\right)
$$

and so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{E}(t) \leq d\left(\frac{r+1}{r-1}\right), \quad \forall t \in[0, T) . \tag{4.2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also,

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{1}(t):=\mathscr{E}(t)+\frac{1}{r+1}\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1} \leq d\left(\frac{r+1}{r-1}\right)+\frac{2 d}{r-1}=d\left(\frac{r+3}{r-1}\right), \tag{4.2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $t \in[0, T)$. By a standard continuation argument, we conclude that the solution is global.

## Chapter 5

## Energy Decay

We begin this chapter by establishing the observability-stability estimate, whereby the total energy of the system is controlled by a function of damping as in [3, 11, 21]. This estimate, combined with the energy identity, allows us to derive an inequality that compares the energy at time $t$ with the energy at time 0 . From here, we construct an ordinary differential equation, related to this inequality, whose solution will bound the total energy for all sufficiently large $t$. A significant difficulty arises as this ordinary differential equation is non-autonomous and we cannot find its solution explicitly. This problem is overcome via a careful comparison to a new ordinary differential equation, which is also non-autonomous, however the simplicity of its form does allow us to find the explicit solution, along with its decay rate. From here, we may provide a decay rate for the total energy of the system (1.0.1).

### 5.1 Observability-Stability Estimate

We start by showing Lemma 5.1.1) that provides the equivalence of the quadratic energy, $\mathscr{E}(t)=\frac{1}{2}\left\|u_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}$ and the total energy $E(t)=\mathscr{E}(t)-\frac{1}{r+1}\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1}$.

Lemma 5.1.1. Under Assumptions 1.1.1 and 1.1.2, we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{r-1}{2(r+1)}\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2} \leq J(u(t)),  \tag{5.1.1}\\
\frac{r-1}{r+1} \mathscr{E}(t) \leq E(t) \leq \mathscr{E}(t) \tag{5.1.2}
\end{gather*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{r-1}{r+1} \mathscr{E}(t)+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s \leq \mathscr{E}(0) \leq \frac{r+1}{r-1}\left(\mathscr{E}(t)+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s\right) \tag{5.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. By Theorem 1.2.4, $u(t) \in \mathcal{W}_{1}$ for all $t$ and so for each fixed $t \in[0, \infty)$ either
(i) $\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}=0$ or
(ii) $\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}>\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1}$.

If (i) holds, then $0 \leq\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1} \leq C\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{r+1}=0$ and $J(u(t))=0$. So trivially, $\frac{r-1}{2(r+1)}\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2} \leq J(u(t))$. Additionally, $E(t)=\mathscr{E}(t)=\frac{1}{2}\left\|u_{t}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}$ and so (5.1.2) is verified.

If (ii) holds, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
J(u(t)) & =\frac{1}{2}\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{r+1}\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1} \quad \geq \frac{1}{2}\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{r+1}\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2} \\
& =\frac{r-1}{2(r+1)}\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

and so (5.1.1) holds. Now note that since $\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2}>\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1}$ for each $t$

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{r-1}{(r+1)} \mathscr{E}(t) & =\mathscr{E}(t)-\frac{2}{r+1} \mathscr{E}(t) \leq \mathscr{E}(t)-\frac{1}{r+1}\|\nabla u(t)\|_{2}^{2} \\
& <\mathscr{E}(t)-\frac{1}{r+1}\|u(t)\|_{r+1}^{r+1}=E(t) \leq \mathscr{E}(t) \tag{5.1.4}
\end{align*}
$$

and (5.1.2) holds. Utilizing (5.1.2) and recalling the energy identity (1.2.1), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{r-1}{r+1} \mathscr{E}(t)+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s \leq E(t)+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s=E(0) \leq \mathscr{E}(0) \tag{5.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

which gives the left-hand inequality of (5.1.3). Taking $t=0$ in (5.1.4) and again employing the energy identity, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{r-1}{(r+1)} \mathscr{E}(0) \leq E(0)=E(t)+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s \tag{5.1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Given that $E(t) \leq \mathscr{E}(t)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{r-1}{(r+1)} \mathscr{E}(0) \leq \mathscr{E}(t)+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s \tag{5.1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Multiplying (5.1.7) by $\frac{r+1}{r-1}$ gives the right-hand side of (5.1.3).

Proposition 5.1.2. (Observability-Stabilization Inequality) Under the validity of Assumptions 1.1.1 and 1.1.2 and assuming that $u_{0} \in \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$ and $1<r<5$, there exists $T_{0}>0$ such that the global solution of (1.0.1) given by Theorem 1.2.4 satisfies

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{r-1}{r+1} \mathscr{E}(t) \leq E(t) & \leq C(p, \Omega)\left\{\frac{D_{t_{0}}^{t}}{t-t_{0}}+\left(\frac{D_{t_{0}}^{t}}{t-t_{0}}\right)^{\frac{2}{p}}\right. \\
& \left.+\left(\frac{D_{t_{0}}^{t}}{t-t_{0}}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(D_{0}^{t}\right)^{1 / p}\right)\right\} \tag{5.1.8}
\end{align*}
$$

for all $t, t_{0} \geq 1$ with $t-t_{0}>T_{0}$, where $D_{\tau}^{t}:=\int_{\tau}^{t}\|\nabla u(s)\|_{p}^{p} d s$.
Note that the left hand inequality in (5.1.8) provides the non-negativity of the total energy $E(t)$ in Theorem 1.2.5.

Proof. We begin with establishing the equipartition of energy. Testing in (1.1.44)
with $u$ (and replacing 0 by $t_{0} \geq 0$ ) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
-\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{2}^{2} d s & +\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|\nabla u(s)\|_{2}^{2} d s+\left(u_{t}(t), u(t)\right)-\left(u_{t}\left(t_{0}\right), u\left(t_{0}\right)\right) \\
& +\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla u_{t}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t} \cdot \nabla u d x d s=\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f(u) u d x d s \tag{5.1.9}
\end{align*}
$$

Adding $2 \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{2}^{2} d s$ to both sides of (5.1.9) and dividing by 2 to gives

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \mathscr{E}(s) d s & =\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{2}^{2} d s-\frac{1}{2}\left(u_{t}(t), u(t)\right)+\frac{1}{2}\left(u_{t}\left(t_{0}\right), u\left(t_{0}\right)\right) \\
& -\frac{1}{2} \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla u_{t}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t} \cdot \nabla u d x d s+\frac{1}{2} \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f(u) u d x d s \tag{5.1.10}
\end{align*}
$$

We proceed by estimating the terms on the right hand side of (5.1.10). We begin by bounding the initial and terminal energies. Let $s \geq 0$. Then by Young's inequality,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\left(u_{t}(s), u(s)\right)\right| \leq \int_{\Omega}\left|u_{t}(s) \| u(s)\right| d s \leq \frac{1}{2}\left(\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\|u(s)\|_{2}^{2}\right) \leq C \mathscr{E}(s) \tag{5.1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $q^{\prime} \geq 6$ (from (1.1.2)), $q^{\prime} / 2>1$. By Hölder's inequality with $q^{\prime} / 2$ and $\frac{q^{\prime}}{q^{\prime}-2}$, followed by (1.1.3) and Hölder's inequality with $p / 2$ and $\frac{p}{p-2}$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{2}^{2} d s & =\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|u_{t}(s)\right|^{2} d x d s \\
& \leq C_{\Omega} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|u_{t}(s)\right\|_{q^{\prime}}^{2} d s \\
& \leq C_{\Omega} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{2} d s \\
& \leq C_{\Omega}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{\frac{p-2}{p}}\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{2 / p} \tag{5.1.12}
\end{align*}
$$

Now, to bound the term due to damping we apply Hölder's inequality with $\frac{p}{p-1}$
and $p$ twice.

$$
\begin{align*}
\left.\left|\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\right| \nabla u_{t}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t} \cdot \nabla u d x d s \mid & \leq \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}\right\|_{p}^{p-1}\|\nabla u\|_{p} d s \\
& \leq\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|\nabla u\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{1 / p} \tag{5.1.13}
\end{align*}
$$

Finally, we estimate the source term. Recalling that $1<r<5$, by Hölder's inequality with $\frac{4}{5-r}$ and $\frac{4}{r-1}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f(u) u d x d s & =\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}|u|^{r+1} d x d s=\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}|u|^{\frac{5-r}{2}}|u|^{\frac{3}{2}(r-1)} d x d s \\
& \leq \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|u(s)\|_{2}^{\frac{5-r}{2}}\|u(s)\|_{6}^{\frac{3}{2}(r-1)} d s \tag{5.1.14}
\end{align*}
$$

Now applying Young's inequality with $\frac{4}{5-r}$ and $\frac{4}{r-1}$, for $\epsilon>0$, followed by the Sobolev Imbeddings,

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f(u) u d x d s & \leq C_{\epsilon} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|u(s)\|_{2}^{2} d s+\epsilon \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|u(s)\|_{6}^{6} d s \\
& \leq C_{\epsilon} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|u(s)\|_{2}^{2} d s+\epsilon C \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|\nabla u(s)\|_{2}^{6} d s \\
& \leq C_{\epsilon} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|u(s)\|_{2}^{2} d s+\epsilon C_{d, r} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|\nabla u(s)\|_{2}^{2} d s \tag{5.1.15}
\end{align*}
$$

by the bound in (4.2.12). Using the estimates of (5.1.11) - (5.1.13) and (5.1.15) with (5.1.10) yields

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \mathscr{E}(s) d s & \leq C_{\Omega}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{\frac{p-2}{p}}\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{2 / p}+C\left(\mathscr{E}\left(t_{0}\right)+\mathscr{E}(t)\right)+\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|\nabla u\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{1 / p} \\
& +C_{\epsilon} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|u(s)\|_{2}^{2} d s+\epsilon C_{d, r} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|\nabla u(s)\|_{2}^{2} d s \tag{5.1.16}
\end{align*}
$$

Now, recall that for solutions in the good part of the well, we have the estimate
in (5.1.2), which we can multiply by $\frac{r+1}{r-1}$ so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{E}\left(t_{0}\right)+\mathscr{E}(t) \leq \frac{r+1}{r-1}\left(E\left(t_{0}\right)+E(t)\right)=\frac{r+1}{r-1}\left(2 E(t)-\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s\right) \tag{5.1.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

by the energy identity (1.2.1).
By choosing $\epsilon>0$ sufficiently small so that $\epsilon C_{d, r}<1 / 4$ in (5.1.15) and using (5.1.17) we get

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \mathscr{E}(s) d s & \leq C\left\{E(t)+D_{t_{0}}^{t}+C_{\epsilon} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|u(s)\|_{2}^{2} d s\right. \\
& \left.+C_{\Omega}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{\frac{p-2}{p}}\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{2 / p}+\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|\nabla u\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{1 / p}\right\} \tag{5.1.18}
\end{align*}
$$

Now, since $E(t)$ is monotonically decreasing, for all $t_{0} \leq s \leq t$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(t-t_{0}\right) E\left(t_{0}\right) \geq \int_{t_{0}}^{t} E(s) d s \geq\left(t-t_{0}\right) E(t) \tag{5.1.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

and for $t-t_{0}>1$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(t) \leq \frac{1}{t-t_{0}} \int_{t_{0}}^{t} E(s) d s \leq \frac{1}{t-t_{0}} \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \mathscr{E}(s) d s \leq \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \mathscr{E}(s) d s \tag{5.1.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, we can estimate $\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \mathscr{E}(s) d s$ as

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \mathscr{E}(s) d s & \leq C\left[D_{t_{0}}^{t}+C_{\epsilon} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|u(s)\|_{2}^{2} d s\right. \\
& \left.+C_{\Omega}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{\frac{p-2}{p}}\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{2 / p}+\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|\nabla u\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{1 / p}\right] \tag{5.1.21}
\end{align*}
$$

for $t-t_{0}$ sufficiently large, say, $t-t_{0}>2 C$.
We next estimate $\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|\nabla u\|_{p}^{p} d s$ in terms of $D_{t_{0}}^{t}$ and $D_{0}^{t}$. By the regularity of $u$
provided in Theorem 1.2.1, along with the assumption that $u_{0} \in \mathrm{~W}_{0}^{1, p}(\Omega)$, we have that $\nabla u, \nabla u_{t} \in L^{2}\left(0, T ; L^{2}(\Omega)\right)^{3}$ and so for $s \geq 0$,

$$
\begin{align*}
|\nabla u(s)|^{p} & =\left|\nabla u(0)+\int_{0}^{s} \nabla u_{t}(\tau) d \tau\right|^{p} \\
& \leq 2^{p-1}\left(|\nabla u(0)|^{p}+\left|\int_{0}^{s} \nabla u_{t}(\tau) d \tau\right|^{p}\right) \\
& \leq 2^{p-1}\left(|\nabla u(0)|^{p}+s^{p-1} \int_{0}^{s}\left|\nabla u_{t}(\tau)\right|^{p} d \tau\right) \tag{5.1.22}
\end{align*}
$$

by Jensen's inequality. Integrating (5.1.22) over $\Omega$ yields,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\nabla u(s)\|_{p}^{p} \leq 2^{p-1}\left(\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}^{p}+s^{p-1} \int_{0}^{s}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(\tau)\right\|_{p}^{p} d \tau\right) \tag{5.1.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|\nabla u(s)\|_{p}^{p} d s & =2^{p-1} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\{\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}^{p}+s^{p-1} \int_{0}^{s}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(\tau)\right\|_{p}^{p} d \tau\right\} d s \\
& =2^{p-1}\left(\left(t-t_{0}\right)\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}^{p}+\int_{t_{0}}^{t} s^{p-1} \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(\tau)\right\|_{p}^{p} d \tau d s\right) \\
& \leq 2^{p-1}\left(\left(t-t_{0}\right)\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}^{p}+t^{p-1} \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(\tau)\right\|_{p}^{p} d \tau d s\right) \\
& \leq 2^{p-1}\left(\left(t-t_{0}\right)\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}^{p}+t^{p-1}\left(t-t_{0}\right) \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(\tau)\right\|_{p}^{p} d \tau\right) \\
& \leq 2^{p}\left(t-t_{0}\right)\left(\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}^{p}+t^{p-1} D_{0}^{t}\right) \tag{5.1.24}
\end{align*}
$$

As a result, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
C\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}} & \left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|\nabla u\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{1 / p} \\
& \leq C_{p}\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{1 / p}\left[\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(D_{0}^{t}\right)^{1 / p}\right] \tag{5.1.25}
\end{align*}
$$

We now choose $T_{0}=2 C+1$ and employ the bounds in (5.1.25) and (5.1.21) to conclude that

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \mathscr{E}(s) d s & \leq C_{\epsilon} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|u(s)\|_{2}^{2} d s+C_{\Omega}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{\frac{p-2}{p}}\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{2 / p}+C D_{t_{0}}^{t} \\
& +C_{p}\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{1 / p}\left[\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(D_{0}^{t}\right)^{1 / p}\right] \tag{5.1.26}
\end{align*}
$$

Proposition 5.1.3. (Estimate of lower order term) Assume the hypotheses of Proposition 5.1.2 hold, with $T_{0}=2 C+1$. Then, for $t-t_{0}>T_{0}$ there exists a constant $C(p, \Omega)$ such that

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|u(s)\|_{2}^{2} d s & \leq C(p, \Omega)\left\{D_{t_{0}}^{t}+C_{\Omega}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{\frac{p-2}{p}}\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{2 / p}\right. \\
+ & \left.\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{1 / p}\left[\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(D_{0}^{t}\right)^{1 / p}\right]\right\} \tag{5.1.27}
\end{align*}
$$

If we assume for a moment the validity of Proposition 5.1.3, we have from (5.1.26)

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \mathscr{E}(s) d s & \leq C_{\epsilon} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|u(s)\|_{2}^{2} d s+C_{\Omega}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{\frac{p-2}{p}}\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{2 / p}+C D_{t_{0}}^{t} \\
& +C_{p}\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{1 / p}\left[\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(D_{0}^{t}\right)^{1 / p}\right] \\
& \leq C(p, \Omega, \epsilon)\left\{D_{t_{0}}^{t}+C_{\Omega}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{\frac{p-2}{p}}\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{2 / p}\right. \\
& \left.+\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{1 / p}\left[\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(D_{0}^{t}\right)^{1 / p}\right]\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

By recalling (5.1.20) we find the following estimate for the total energy

$$
\begin{align*}
E(t) & \leq C(p, \Omega)\left\{\frac{D_{t_{0}}^{t}}{t-t_{0}}+\left(\frac{D_{t_{0}}^{t}}{t-t_{0}}\right)^{\frac{2}{p}}\right. \\
& \left.+\left(\frac{D_{t_{0}}^{t}}{t-t_{0}}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left[\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(D_{0}^{t}\right)^{1 / p}\right]\right\} . \tag{5.1.28}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. To prove (5.1.27) we proceed by the standard compactness-uniqueness argument (see, for instance, $[3,11,21]$ ) . Suppose, for the sake of a contradiction, that (5.1.27) is false. Then there exists a sequence of initial data $\left\{\left(u^{k}(0), u_{t}^{k}(0)\right)\right\}$ satisfying Assumptions 1.1.1 and 1.1.2 such that the corresponding solutions of (1.0.1) satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty} \frac{B\left(u^{k}\right)}{\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|u^{k}(s)\right\|_{2}^{2} d s}=0 \tag{5.1.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $B\left(u^{k}\right)$ is defined as,

$$
\begin{align*}
B\left(u^{k}\right) & :=\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{k}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s+\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{k}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{2 / p}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{\frac{p-2}{p}} \\
& +\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{k}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{1 / p} \\
& \times\left\{\left\|\nabla u^{k}(0)\right\|_{p}+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{k}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{1 / p}\right\} . \tag{5.1.30}
\end{align*}
$$

Now, since the sequence solutions lie in $\mathcal{W}_{1}$ for each $t>0$, by Theorem 1.2.4, $\mathscr{E}^{k}(s)$ and $E_{1}^{k}(s)$ are uniformly bounded on $\left[t_{0}, t\right]$ for all $k$, where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathscr{E}^{k}(s):=\frac{1}{2}\left\|u_{t}^{k}(s)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\left\|\nabla u^{k}(s)\right\|_{2}^{2} \tag{5.1.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{1}^{k}(s):=\mathscr{E}^{k}(s)+\frac{1}{r+1}\left\|u^{k}(s)\right\|_{r+1}^{r+1} \tag{5.1.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, $u^{k}$ is bounded in $L^{\infty}\left(t_{0}, t ; \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right), u_{t}^{k}$ is bounded in $L^{\infty}\left(t_{0}, t ; L^{2}(\Omega)\right)$, and $u^{k}$ is bounded in $L^{r+1}\left(t_{0}, t ; L^{r+1}(\Omega)\right)$. Hence, there exists $u$ such that, on a relabeled subsequence, we have

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
u^{k} & \rightarrow u \text { weak }^{*} \text { in } L^{\infty}\left(t_{0}, t ; \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right)  \tag{5.1.33}\\
u_{t}^{k} & \rightarrow u_{t} \text { weak }^{*} \text { in } L^{\infty}\left(t_{0}, t ; L^{2}(\Omega)\right) \\
u_{t}^{k} & \rightarrow u_{t} \text { weakly in } L^{r+1}\left(t_{0}, t ; L^{r+1}(\Omega)\right)
\end{align*}\right.
$$

Also, in light of (5.1.29) and (5.1.33), it must be that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{k}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s=0 \tag{5.1.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note here that $H_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \subset \mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega) \subset L^{2}(\Omega)$, where $0<\epsilon<1$, each injection is continuous, and the first injection is compact. Also, because $\left\{u^{k}\right\}$ is bounded in $L^{\infty}\left(t_{0}, t ; \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right)$, then in particular, $\left\{u^{k}\right\}$ is also bounded in $L^{2}\left(t_{0}, t ; \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right)$. We also know that $\left\{u_{t}^{k}\right\}$ is bounded in $L^{\infty}\left(t_{0}, t ; L^{2}(\Omega)\right)$. Hence, by Aubin's Compactness Theorem, there exists a subsequence, labeled again by $\left\{u^{k}\right\}$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
u^{k} \rightarrow u \text { strongly in } L^{2}\left(t_{0}, t ; \mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)\right) \tag{5.1.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\epsilon>0$ is defined by

$$
\epsilon \leq \begin{cases}\frac{8-(6 / p)-r}{2 r}, & \text { if } 2 \leq p<3  \tag{5.1.36}\\ \frac{6-r}{2 r}, & \text { if } p \geq 3\end{cases}
$$

Now, we test the $k$ th solution, $u^{k}$, against $\phi \in C_{0}^{\infty}\left(\Omega \times\left(t_{0}, t\right)\right)$ to get

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(-u_{t}^{k} \phi_{t}+\right. & \left.\nabla u^{k} \cdot \nabla \phi\right) d x d s+\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla u_{t}^{k}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{k} \cdot \nabla \phi d x d s \\
& =\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f\left(u^{k}\right) \phi d x d s \tag{5.1.37}
\end{align*}
$$

Note that by Hölder's inequality and the Sobolev Imbedding we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|u_{t}^{k}(s)\right\|_{2}^{2} d s \leq C_{\Omega}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{\frac{p-2}{p}}\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{k}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{2 / p} d s \rightarrow 0, \quad \text { as } k \rightarrow \infty \tag{5.1.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

by (5.1.34). That is, $u_{t}^{k} \rightarrow 0$ strongly in $L^{2}\left(t_{0}, t ; L^{2}(\Omega)\right)$ as $k \rightarrow 0$ and hence, $\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} u_{t}^{k} \phi_{t} d x d s \rightarrow 0$ as $k \rightarrow \infty$. Next, by (5.1.33), $\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} \nabla u^{k} \cdot \nabla \phi d x d s \rightarrow \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} \nabla u$. $\nabla \phi d x d s$. Further, as in (5.1.13),

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left.\left|\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\right| \nabla u_{t}^{k}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{k} \cdot \nabla \phi d x d s \mid \\
& \quad \leq\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{k}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|\nabla \phi\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{1 / p} \rightarrow 0, \quad \text { as } k \rightarrow \infty
\end{aligned}
$$

by (5.1.34). Finally, we show that $\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f\left(u^{k}\right) \phi d x d s \rightarrow \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f(u) \phi d x d s$. Let $L_{f}$ be the local Lipschitz constant for $f: \mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega) \rightarrow L^{q}(\Omega)$ (see Lemma 2.1.3). By Hölder's inequality with $q$ and $q^{\prime}$ as in (1.1.2),

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left(f\left(u^{k}\right)-f(u)\right) \phi d x d s\right| & \leq \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|f\left(u^{k}\right)-f(u)\right\|_{q}\|\phi\|_{q^{\prime}} d x d s \\
& \leq L_{f} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|u^{k}-u\right\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)}\|\phi\|_{q^{\prime}} d s \\
& \leq L_{f}\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|u^{k}-u\right\|_{\mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)}^{2} d s\right)^{1 / 2}\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|\phi\|_{q^{\prime}}^{2} d s\right)^{1 / 2} \tag{5.1.39}
\end{align*}
$$

Since $u^{k} \rightarrow u$ strongly in $L^{2}\left(t_{0}, t ; \mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)\right)$, we have $\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f\left(u^{k}\right) \phi d x d s \rightarrow \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f(u) \phi d x d s$. Thus, passing to the limit in (5.1.37) shows that $u$ satisfies (in the sense of distributions),

$$
\begin{cases}-\Delta u=|u|^{r-1} u & \text { in } \Omega  \tag{5.1.40}\\ u=0 & \text { on } \Gamma\end{cases}
$$

which implies that $\|\nabla u\|_{2}^{2}=\|u\|_{r+1}^{r+1}$. Since $u(t) \in \mathcal{W}_{1}$, it must be that $u=0$ a.e.
$\left(t_{0}, t\right) \times \Omega$.
We now renormalize the sequence $\left\{u^{k}\right\}$. Define

$$
\begin{equation*}
d_{k}:=\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|u^{k}(s)\right\|_{2}^{2} d s\right)^{1 / 2} \tag{5.1.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

Without loss of generality, assume that $d_{k} \neq 0$ for each $k$ and put

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{u}^{k}:=\frac{u^{k}}{d_{k}} \tag{5.1.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

Observe that (5.1.35) combined with the conclusion that $u=0$ a.e $\left(t_{0}, t\right) \times \Omega$ implies that $d_{k} \rightarrow 0$. Also, note that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\bar{u}^{k}(s)\right\|_{2}^{2} d s\right)^{1 / 2}=1, \quad \text { for all } k . \tag{5.1.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

Put $E^{k}(t):=\mathscr{E}^{k}(s)-\frac{1}{r+1}\left\|u^{k}(s)\right\|_{r+1}^{r+1}$ and $\overline{\mathscr{E}}^{k}(t):=\frac{1}{2}\left\|\bar{u}_{t}^{k}(t)\right\|_{2}^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\left\|\nabla \bar{u}^{k}\right\|_{2}^{2}$. Then by the equivalence of $\mathscr{E}^{k}(t)$ and $E^{k}(t)$ supplied by Lemma 5.1.1, for all $k \in \mathbb{N}$ and $s \in[0, t]$ we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\overline{\mathscr{E}}^{k}(t) \leq \frac{C}{d_{k}^{2}} E^{k}(t) & \leq \frac{C}{d_{k}^{2}}\left\{C_{\epsilon} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|u^{k}(s)\right\|_{2}^{2} d s+C(p, \Omega) B\left(u^{k}\right)\right\} \\
& \leq M \tag{5.1.44}
\end{align*}
$$

for some number $M>0$, by (5.1.20), (5.1.26) and (5.1.29). Thus, again we have that $\bar{u}^{k}$ is bounded in $L^{\infty}\left(t_{0}, t ; \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right), \bar{u}_{t}^{k}$ is bounded in $L^{\infty}\left(t_{0}, t ; L^{2}(\Omega)\right)$ and $\bar{u}^{k}$ is bounded in $L^{r+1}\left(t_{0}, t ; L^{r+1}(\Omega)\right)$ for $1<r<5$ by the Sobolev Imbedding Theorem.

Then on a relabeled subsequence we have

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\bar{u}^{k} \rightarrow \bar{u} \text { weak }^{*} \text { in } L^{\infty}\left(t_{0}, t ; \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega)\right),  \tag{5.1.45}\\
\bar{u}_{t}^{k} \rightarrow \bar{u}_{t} \text { weak }^{*} \text { in } L^{\infty}\left(t_{0}, t ; L^{2}(\Omega)\right)
\end{array}\right.
$$

Also, as in (5.1.35), by Aubin's Compactness Theorem

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{u}^{k} \rightarrow \bar{u} \text { strongly in } L^{2}\left(t_{0}, t ; \mathrm{H}^{1-\epsilon}(\Omega)\right), \tag{5.1.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

on a relabeled subsequence.
Let us now examine $d_{k}$ more closely. By applying Hölder's inequality with $\frac{p}{p-2}$ and $p / 2$ twice we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
d_{k}^{2}=\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|u^{k}(s)\right\|_{2}^{2} d s \leq C_{\Omega}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{\frac{p-2}{p}}\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\nabla u^{k}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{2 / p} \tag{5.1.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, recalling (5.1.24) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
d_{k}^{2} \leq C_{\Omega}\left(t-t_{0}\right)\left\{\left\|\nabla u_{k}(0)\right\|_{p}+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{k}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{1 / p}\right\}^{2} \tag{5.1.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

We next divide (5.1.37) by $d_{k}$ and look at the limit as $k \rightarrow \infty$. As in (5.1.12),

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|\bar{u}_{t}^{k}\right|^{2} d x d s & =\frac{1}{d_{k}^{2}} \int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|u_{t}^{k}(s)\right\|_{2}^{2} d s \\
& \leq \frac{C_{\Omega}}{d_{k}^{2}}\left(t-t_{0}\right)^{\frac{p-2}{p}}\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{k}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{2 / p} d s \tag{5.1.49}
\end{align*}
$$

which converges to 0 as $k \rightarrow \infty$ by (5.1.29). From (5.1.45) it is clear that $\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} \nabla \bar{u}^{k}$.
$\nabla \phi d x d s \rightarrow \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} \nabla \bar{u} \cdot \nabla \phi d x d s$. Now for the term due to damping, as before

$$
\begin{align*}
\left.\left|\frac{1}{d_{k}} \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\right| \nabla u_{t}^{k}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{k} & \cdot \nabla \phi d x d s \mid \\
& \leq \frac{1}{d_{k}}\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{k}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\|\nabla \phi\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{1 / p} \tag{5.1.50}
\end{align*}
$$

Then by (5.1.48),

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left.\left.\left|\frac{1}{d_{k}} \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\right| \nabla u_{t}^{k}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{k} \cdot \nabla \phi d x d s \right\rvert\, \\
& \quad \leq \frac{C_{\Omega} C_{\phi}}{d_{k}^{2}}\left(t-t_{0}\right)\left(\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{k}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left\{\left\|\nabla u^{k}(0)\right\|_{p}\right. \\
& \left.\quad+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\int_{0}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}^{k}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s\right)^{1 / p}\right\} \tag{5.1.51}
\end{align*}
$$

where $C_{\phi}$ is a constant depending on $\phi$. Now by (5.1.29) we have that $\frac{1}{d_{k}} \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|\nabla u_{t}^{k}\right|^{p-2} \nabla u_{t}^{k} \cdot \nabla \phi d x d s \rightarrow 0$ as $k \rightarrow \infty$.

Finally, examining the source term gives

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{1}{d_{k}} \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f\left(u^{k}\right) \phi d x d s & =\frac{C_{\phi}}{d_{k}} \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|u^{k}\right|^{r} d x d s \\
& =C_{\phi} d_{k}^{r-1} \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega}\left|\bar{u}^{k}\right|^{r} d x d s \tag{5.1.52}
\end{align*}
$$

where $r>1$. Since $\bar{u}^{k}$ is bounded in $L^{r+1}\left(t_{0}, t ; L^{r+1}(\Omega)\right)$ and $d_{k} \rightarrow 0$, we have that $\frac{1}{d_{k}} \int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} f\left(u^{k}\right) \phi d x d s \rightarrow 0$. Thus, we now have that $\bar{u}$ solves

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{t_{0}}^{t} \int_{\Omega} \nabla \bar{u} \cdot \nabla \phi d x d s=0 \tag{5.1.53}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all sufficiently smooth $\phi \in C_{0}^{\infty}\left(\Omega \times\left(t_{0}, t\right)\right)$, and so $\bar{u}=0$ a.e. $\Omega \times\left(t_{0}, t\right)$. However, this contradicts (5.1.43). Thus (5.1.27) must hold and Proposition 5.1.3 is verified.

Recall the energy identity (1.2.1) and rearrange to get

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{t_{0}}^{t}=\int_{t_{0}}^{t}\left\|\nabla u_{t}(s)\right\|_{p}^{p} d s=E\left(t_{0}\right)-E(t) \tag{5.1.54}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, define

$$
\begin{equation*}
T=t-t_{0}, \quad t>t_{0} \tag{5.1.55}
\end{equation*}
$$

and require $t_{0} \geq T>T_{0}$ where $T_{0}$ is as in Proposition 5.1.3. Also note that by (5.1.2),

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{0}^{t}=E(0)-E(t) \leq E(0)-\frac{r-1}{r+1} \mathscr{E}(t) \leq E(0) \tag{5.1.56}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then substituting (5.1.54) and (5.1.55) into (5.1.28) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(t) \leq C(p, \Omega)\left\{\frac{D_{t_{0}}^{t}}{T}+\left(\frac{D_{t_{0}}^{t}}{T}\right)^{\frac{2}{p}}+\left(\frac{D_{t_{0}}^{t}}{T}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}(E(0))^{1 / p}\right)\right\} \tag{5.1.57}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $T \geq 1$ we can obtain the estimate

$$
\begin{align*}
E(t) & \leq C\left(p, \Omega,\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}, E(0)\right)\left\{\frac{D_{t_{0}}^{t}}{T}+\left(\frac{D_{t_{0}}^{t}}{T}\right)^{\frac{2}{p}}+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\frac{D_{t_{0}}^{t}}{T}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\right\} \\
& \leq C\left(p, \Omega,\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}, E(0)\right)\left\{D_{t_{0}}^{t}+\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{\frac{2}{p}}+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\right\} \\
& =H_{t}\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right) \tag{5.1.58}
\end{align*}
$$

where the function $H_{t}$ is defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{t}(\rho)=C\left(\rho+(t \rho)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}+\rho^{2 / p}\right) \tag{5.1.59}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $C=C\left(p, \Omega,\|\nabla u(0)\|_{p}, E(0)\right)$. Now, assuming that $t_{0} \geq T$, we have that $t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}=$ $\left(t_{0}+T\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}} \leq 2 t_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}$, implying that $H_{t}(\rho) \leq 2 H_{t_{0}}(\rho)$. Thus, we estimate

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(t) \leq H_{t}\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right) \leq 2 H_{t_{0}}\left(D_{t_{0}}^{t}\right) \tag{5.1.60}
\end{equation*}
$$

At this point we incorporate the multiple of 2 above into the constant $C$ from the definition of $H_{t}$. Then (5.1.60) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(t) \leq H_{t_{0}}\left(E\left(t_{0}\right)-E(t)\right) \tag{5.1.61}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, for fixed $t_{0}, H_{t_{0}}(\rho)$ is concave and monotone increasing in $\rho$ and passes through the origin. We denote the inverse of the mapping $\rho \mapsto H_{t_{0}}(\rho)$ by $H_{t_{0}}^{-1}$ and note that $H_{t_{0}}^{-1}$ is convex and monotone increasing in $\rho$. We then have

$$
H_{t_{0}}^{-1}(E(t)) \leq E\left(t_{0}\right)-E(t)
$$

and so

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(t)+H_{t_{0}}^{-1}(E(t)) \leq E\left(t_{0}\right) \tag{5.1.62}
\end{equation*}
$$

Choosing $t_{0}=m T$ and $t=(m+1) T$ provides the family of inequalities:

$$
\begin{equation*}
E((m+1) T)+H_{t_{0}}^{-1}(E((m+1) T)) \leq E(m T) \tag{5.1.63}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $m=1,2,3, \ldots$

### 5.2 Comparable ODE

We now define the sequence $s_{m}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{m}:=E(m T) \tag{5.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and put $\phi_{m}(\cdot):=H_{t_{0}}^{-1}(\cdot)=H_{m T}^{-1}(\cdot)$. Then (5.1.63) becomes

$$
s_{m+1}+\phi_{m}\left(s_{m+1}\right) \leq s_{m}
$$

Since $H_{m T}^{-1}$ is strictly increasing it is clear that $\phi_{m}$ and $\left(I+\phi_{m}(\cdot)\right)^{-1}$ are strictly increasing as well and so,

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{m+1} \leq\left(I+\phi_{m}(\cdot)\right)^{-1} s_{m} . \tag{5.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

By multiplying both sides of (5.2.2) by -1 and adding $s_{m}$ to each side, we conclude that

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{m}-s_{m+1} \geq s_{m}-\left(I+\phi_{m}(\cdot)\right)^{-1} s_{m} \tag{5.2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thusly, we define the function $q$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
q(t, s):=s-\left(I+\phi_{t}(\cdot)\right)^{-1} s \tag{5.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

and note its following properties:
$q$ is increasing in $s$ and nonnegative: Since $H_{t_{0}}^{-1}(\cdot)$ is increasing and passes through the origin, $I+H_{t_{0}}^{-1}(\cdot)$ is strictly increasing (and therefore invertible), passes through the origin, and lies above the graph of the identity. Thus, $\left(I+H_{t_{0}}^{-1}(\cdot)\right)^{-1}$
is also increasing, passes through the origin and lies below the graph of the identity, implying that $q$ is nonnegative.
$q$ is decreasing in $t$ : Begin by observing that $H_{t}$ (see (5.1.59)) maps $[0, \infty$ ) onto $[0, \infty)$, for every $t \geq 0$. Let $0 \leq t_{1} \leq t_{2}$. Clearly $H_{t_{1} T}(\rho) \leq H_{t_{2} T}(\rho)$ for all $\rho \geq 0$. Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{t_{1} T}^{-1}(s) \geq H_{t_{2} T}^{-1}(s), \quad \text { for all } s \geq 0 \tag{5.2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

and further,

$$
\begin{equation*}
s+H_{t_{1} T}^{-1}(s) \geq s+H_{t_{2} T}^{-1}(s), \quad \text { for all } s \geq 0 \tag{5.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now as above, for any $t \geq 0, I+H_{t}^{-1}$ maps $[0, \infty)$ onto $[0, \infty)$, is strictly increasing, and invertible. Therefore, from (5.2.6) we conclude

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(I+H_{t_{1} T}^{-1}(\cdot)\right)^{-1}(s) \leq\left(I+H_{t_{2} T}^{-1}(\cdot)\right)^{-1}(s), \quad \text { for all } s \geq 0 \tag{5.2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

and so

$$
\begin{equation*}
s-\left(I+H_{t_{1} T}^{-1}(\cdot)\right)^{-1}(s) \geq s-\left(I+H_{t_{2} T}^{-1}(\cdot)\right)^{-1}(s), \quad \text { for all } s \geq 0 \tag{5.2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Finally,

$$
\begin{align*}
q\left(t_{1}, s\right) & =s-\left(I+\phi_{t_{1}}(\cdot)\right)^{-1} s=s-\left(I+H_{t_{1} T}^{-1}(\cdot)\right)^{-1} s \\
& \geq s-\left(I+H_{t_{2} T}^{-1}(\cdot)\right)^{-1} s=s-\left(I+\phi_{t_{2}}(\cdot)\right)^{-1} s=q\left(t_{2}, s\right) \tag{5.2.9}
\end{align*}
$$

and so $q$ is decreasing in $t$.

In what proceeds, we will consider the non-autonomous ordinary differential equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t} S(t)+q(t, S(t))=0, \quad S(1)=s_{1}=E(T) \tag{5.2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

We first rewrite the function $q$. Let $t$ be fixed, put $\Phi(s)=\phi_{t}(s)=H_{t T}^{-1}$ and note that $(I+\Phi), \Phi, H_{t T}, q:[0, \infty) \rightarrow[0, \infty)$. Then,

$$
\begin{align*}
q & =I-(I+\Phi)^{-1}=\left[(I+\Phi) \circ(I+\Phi)^{-1}\right]-(I+\Phi)^{-1} \\
& =\Phi \circ(I+\Phi)^{-1}=\Phi \circ\left(\Phi^{-1} \circ \Phi+\Phi\right)^{-1}=\Phi \circ\left(\left[\Phi^{-1}+I\right] \circ \Phi\right)^{-1} \\
& =\Phi \circ \Phi^{-1} \circ\left(\Phi^{-1}+I\right)^{-1}=\left(\Phi^{-1}+I\right)^{-1}=\left(H_{t T}+I\right)^{-1} . \tag{5.2.11}
\end{align*}
$$

Thus, if we define

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{t}(\rho):=(C+1) \rho+C(\rho t T)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}+C \rho^{2 / p} \tag{5.2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

then $q(t, s)=G_{t}^{-1}(s)$ and the ODE in (5.2.10) is rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d S}{d t}+G_{t}^{-1}(S)=0, \quad S(1)=s_{1}=E(T) \tag{5.2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition 5.2.1. The initial value problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d S}{d t}+G_{t}^{-1}(S)=0, \quad S(1)=s_{1}=E(T) \tag{5.2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

has a unique solution that exists for all time $t \geq 1$.

Proof. We begin this proof by showing that $\tilde{G}:(1 / 2, \infty) \times \mathbb{R}$, defined by

$$
\tilde{G}(t, s)= \begin{cases}G_{t}^{-1}(s), & s \geq 0  \tag{5.2.15}\\ 0, & s<0\end{cases}
$$

is continuous.
Let $\left(t_{0}, s_{0}\right) \in(1 / 2, \infty) \times \mathbb{R}$ and $\epsilon>0$. If $s_{0}>0$, choose
$\delta<\min \left\{\frac{2 t_{0}-1}{4}, \frac{s_{0}}{2}, \frac{\epsilon(C+1)}{1+C T^{\frac{p-1}{p} \frac{p-1}{p} 2^{1 / p} \rho_{0}} \frac{p-1}{p}}\right\}$ and if $s_{0} \leq 0$, choose
$\delta<\min \left\{\frac{2 t_{0}-1}{4}, \frac{s_{0}}{2}, \epsilon(C+1)\right\}$. Let $(t, s) \in B_{\delta}\left(t_{0}, s_{0}\right)$.
Suppose first that $s_{0}>0$. Note that for all $t_{0} \in(1 / 2, \infty)$,

Put $\rho_{0}:=\tilde{G}\left(t_{0}, s_{0}\right)$ and $\rho:=\tilde{G}(t, s)$. Then, $s_{0}=G_{t_{0}}\left(\rho_{0}\right)$ and $s=G_{t}(\rho)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{0}-s=(C+1)\left(\rho_{0}-\rho\right)+C T^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\left(t_{0} \rho_{0}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}-(t \rho)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\right)+C\left(\rho_{0}^{2 / p}-\rho^{2 / p}\right) \tag{5.2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $\rho_{0} \geq \rho$, then the first and last terms of the right-hand side of (5.2.16) are nonnegative. Now,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(t_{0} \rho_{0}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}-(t \rho)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}=\left(t_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}-t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\right) \rho_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\rho_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}-\rho^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\right) . \tag{5.2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\frac{p-1}{p}<1,(\cdot)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}$ is a concave function, $t_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}-t \frac{p-1}{p} \geq \frac{p-1}{p}\left(t_{0}-t\right) t_{0}^{-1 / p}$. Thus, from

$$
\begin{align*}
s_{0}-s & =(C+1)\left(\rho_{0}-\rho\right)+C\left(\rho_{0}^{2 / p}-\rho^{2 / p}\right) \\
& +C T^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\left(t_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}-t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\right) \rho_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\rho_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}-\rho^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\right)\right) \\
& \geq(C+1)\left(\rho_{0}-\rho\right)+C\left(\rho_{0}^{2 / p}-\rho^{2 / p}\right) \\
& +C T^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left[\frac{p-1}{p}\left(t_{0}-t\right) t_{0}^{-1 / p} \rho_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}+t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\rho_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}-\rho^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\right)\right] . \tag{5.2.18}
\end{align*}
$$

The fact that $\rho_{0}-\rho \geq 0$ implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{0}-s \geq(C+1)\left(\rho_{0}-\rho\right)+C T^{\frac{p-1}{p}} \frac{p-1}{p}\left(t_{0}-t\right) t_{0}^{-1 / p} \rho_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}} . \tag{5.2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus,

$$
\begin{align*}
\delta+ & \delta C T^{\frac{p-1}{p}} \frac{p-1}{p} t_{0}^{-1 / p} \rho_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}} \\
& \geq\left|s_{0}-s\right|-C T^{\frac{p-1}{p}} \frac{p-1}{p}\left|t_{0}-t\right| t_{0}^{-1 / p} \rho_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}} \\
& \geq(C+1)\left(\rho_{0}-\rho\right) . \tag{5.2.20}
\end{align*}
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\epsilon>\delta\left(\frac{1+C T^{\frac{p-1}{p} \frac{p-1}{p} t_{0}^{-1 / p} \rho_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}}}{C+1}\right) \geq\left|\rho_{0}-\rho\right| . \tag{5.2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $\rho_{0}<\rho$, then consider the difference

$$
\begin{equation*}
s-s_{0}=(C+1)\left(\rho-\rho_{0}\right)+C T^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left((t \rho)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}-\left(t_{0} \rho_{0}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\right)+C\left(\rho^{2 / p}-\rho_{0}^{2 / p}\right) . \tag{5.2.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Again, since $(\cdot)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}$ is a concave function, $t^{\frac{p-1}{p}}-t_{0} \frac{p-1}{p} \geq \frac{p-1}{p}\left(t-t_{0}\right) t^{-1 / p}$ and as in

$$
\begin{align*}
s-s_{0} & \geq(C+1)\left(\rho-\rho_{0}\right)+C\left(\rho^{2 / p}-\rho_{0}^{2 / p}\right) \\
& +C T^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left[\frac{p-1}{p}\left(t-t_{0}\right) t^{-1 / p} \rho^{\frac{p-1}{p}}+t_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left(\rho_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}-\rho_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\right)\right] \\
& \left.\geq(C+1)\left(\rho-\rho_{0}\right)+C T^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left[\frac{p-1}{p}\left(t-t_{0}\right) t^{-1 / p} \rho^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\right)\right] . \tag{5.2.23}
\end{align*}
$$

If $t \geq t_{0}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta>\left|s-s_{0}\right|=s-s_{0} \geq(C+1)\left(\rho-\rho_{0}\right)=(C+1)\left|\rho-\rho_{0}\right|, \tag{5.2.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

implying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\epsilon>\delta(C+1) \geq\left|\rho-\rho_{0}\right| \tag{5.2.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $t<t_{0}$, then

$$
\begin{align*}
\delta+\delta C & \left.T^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left[\frac{p-1}{p} t^{-1 / p} \rho^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\right)\right] \\
& \left.\geq\left|s-s_{0}\right|-C T^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\left[\frac{p-1}{p}\left(t-t_{0}\right) t^{-1 / p} \rho^{\frac{p-1}{p}}\right)\right] \\
& \geq(C+1)\left(\rho-\rho_{0}\right) . \tag{5.2.26}
\end{align*}
$$

Recalling that $t \in(1, \infty)$, we know that $t^{-1 / p} \leq 1$. This implies

$$
\begin{align*}
\epsilon & >\delta \frac{1+C T^{\frac{p-1}{p} \frac{p-1}{p} 2^{1 / p} \rho_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}}}{(C+1)} \\
& \geq \delta \frac{1+C T^{\frac{p-1}{p} \frac{p-1}{p} t^{-1 / p} \rho_{0}^{\frac{p-1}{p}}}}{(C+1)} \\
& \geq \rho-\rho_{0} \\
& =\left|\rho-\rho_{0}\right| . \tag{5.2.27}
\end{align*}
$$

If $s_{0}<0$, then $s<0$ and thus $\left|\tilde{G}\left(t_{0}, s_{0}\right)-\tilde{G}(t, s)\right|=|0-0|=0<\epsilon$. Now suppose $s_{0}=0$. If $s \leq 0$ then again, $\left|\tilde{G}\left(t_{0}, s_{0}\right)-\tilde{G}(t, s)\right|<\epsilon$ as above. If $s>0$, then clearly $\rho>\rho_{0}$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
s-s_{0}=s=(C+1) \rho+C T^{\frac{p-1}{p}}(t \rho)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}+C \rho^{2 / p} \geq(C+1) \rho . \tag{5.2.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

By the definition of $\delta$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\epsilon>\frac{\delta}{C+1} \geq \frac{\left|s-s_{0}\right|}{C+1} \geq \rho=\left|\rho_{0}-\rho\right| . \tag{5.2.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore, given any $\epsilon>0$ we have found $\delta>0$ such that $\left|\tilde{G}\left(t_{0}, s_{0}\right)-\tilde{G}(t, s)\right|<\epsilon$ for all $(t, s) \in B_{\delta}\left(t_{0}, s_{0}\right)$ and so $\tilde{G}$ is continuous.

Now, observe that for each fixed $t \in[1, \infty),-\tilde{G}(t, s)$ is non-increasing in $s$ on the rectangle $Q:=\{(t, s): 1 \leq t \leq M,|s-E(t)| \leq 2 E(T)\}$. By Corollary 8.37 of [17], the Initial Value Problem 5.2.14 has a unique solution in $Q$.

We proceed to extend our unique solution to $[1, \infty)$. Note that the unique solution
to the initial value problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d S}{d t}+G_{t}^{-1}(S)=0, \quad S(1)=0 \tag{5.2.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

is identically 0 . Note further that the solution $S$ to Problem 5.2.14 is decreasing as $G_{t}^{-1}$ is non-negative. These two facts imply that $0 \leq S(t) \leq E(T)$ for $t \in[1, M]$. Thus, the unique solution $S(t)$ can be extended, giving the maximal interval of existence $[1, \infty)$.

Now that we have the global existence of $S$, we will show that the sequence $\left\{s_{m}\right\}_{1}^{\infty}$ is bounded by the sequence $\{S(m)\}_{1}^{\infty}$, i.e., $s_{m} \leq S(m)$. Since $q$ is positive we know that $S(t)$ is non-increasing. We proceed by induction. Note that $S(1) \geq s_{1}$ and assume that $S(m) \geq s_{m}$ for some $m \geq 1$. From (5.2.10), $S(m)-S(m+1)=$ $\int_{m}^{m+1} q(\tau, S(\tau)) d \tau$ and therefore,

$$
S(m+1)=S(m)-\int_{m}^{m+1} q(\tau, S(\tau)) d \tau
$$

Now, note that $m \leq \tau$ and $S(m) \geq S(\tau)$. Then, since $q$ is decreasing in its first argument and increasing in its second argument, $q(\tau, S(\tau)) \leq q(m, S(m))$ for each $\tau \geq m$. Thus,

$$
\begin{align*}
S(m+1) & \geq S(m)-\int_{m}^{m+1} q(m, S(m)) d \tau \\
& =S(m)-q(m, S(m)) \geq s_{m}-q\left(m, s_{m}\right) \geq s_{m+1} \tag{5.2.31}
\end{align*}
$$

since $s-q(t, s)=\left(I+\phi_{t}(\cdot)\right)^{-1} s$ is increasing in $s$.

Since

$$
\begin{equation*}
S(m) \geq s_{m}=E(m T) \tag{5.2.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $S$ and $E$ are both decreasing functions, for any $\tau \in[m, m+1]$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
S(\tau-1) \geq S(m) \geq E(m T) \geq E(\tau T) \tag{5.2.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, by relabeling $t=\tau T$ in (5.2.33) we conclude

$$
\begin{equation*}
S(t / T-1) \geq E(t) \quad \text { for } t \geq T \tag{5.2.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, $S(t)$ bounds the energy of (1.0.1) for all $t \geq T$ and subsequently will provide a decay rate of the energy.

### 5.3 Full Decay of ODE

In what follows we will compare $G_{t}$ to the related function $F_{t}$, given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{t}(\rho):=\left(C_{T}+\gamma\right)(\rho t T)^{\frac{p-1}{p}} \tag{5.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\gamma>0$ and $C_{T}$ is a constant to be defined later. By showing that $F_{t}^{-1}(s) \leq$ $G_{t}^{-1}(s)$ we can use the solution to the ordinary differential equation,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d S}{d t}+F_{t}^{-1}(S)=0, \quad S(1)=s_{1}=E(T) \tag{5.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

which we will find explicitly, to provide decay rates for the solution to (5.2.14) and, subsequently, the energy $E(t)$ of our wave equation.

We now show that $S$ decreases to zero over time in the following lemma.

Lemma 5.3.1. Let $S(t)$ be the solution to the ordinary differential equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d S}{d t}+G_{t}^{-1}(S)=0, \quad S(1)=s_{1}=E(T) \tag{5.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $G_{t}$ is defined in (5.2.12). Then $S(t)$ is decreasing and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} S(t)=0 \tag{5.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Since $G_{t}:[0, \infty) \rightarrow[0, \infty), G_{t}^{-1}$ is non-negative. It is clear from this that $S$ is non-increasing. Put $E_{\text {in }}=E(T)$. For any fixed $0<c<E_{i n}$, we will find a time $t_{c}$ for which $S\left(t_{c}\right)<c$. Let $\gamma>0$ be any fixed number, $C_{T}:=C T^{\frac{p-1}{p}}+1$ (recall that $C$ is the constant in the definition of $G_{t}$ ) and define

$$
\begin{equation*}
k:=\frac{1}{T}\left(\frac{1}{C_{T}+\gamma}\right)^{\frac{p}{p-1}}, \quad A_{c}=A(c, p, \gamma):=\frac{\exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{1 /(p-1)}}\right)}{\exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k E_{i n}^{1 /(p-1)}}\right)} \tag{5.3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that $A_{c}>1$ since $c<E_{i n}$. Now choose a time $\tau_{c}$ as

$$
\begin{gather*}
\tau_{c} \geq \max \left\{T, \frac{1}{T}\left(\frac{2 C_{T}}{\gamma}\left[E_{i n}^{1 / p}+E_{i n}^{\frac{3-p}{p}}\right]\right)^{\frac{p}{p-1}},\left(\frac{4 C_{T}}{\gamma}\right)^{\frac{p}{p-1}} \frac{E_{i n}^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}{T}\right. \\
\left.\left(\frac{4 C_{T}}{\gamma}\right)^{\frac{p}{2}} \frac{A_{c}^{\frac{p-3}{2}}}{T}\left(\frac{C_{T}+\gamma}{c}\right)^{\frac{p(p-3)}{2(p-1)}}\right\} . \tag{5.3.6}
\end{gather*}
$$

We will show that $t_{c}:=A_{c} \tau_{c}$ provides a time for $S\left(t_{c}\right)<c$. Define

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{0}=\rho_{0}\left(\tau_{c}\right):=\left(\frac{c}{C_{T}+\gamma}\right)^{\frac{p}{p-1}} \frac{1}{A_{c} \tau_{c} T} \tag{5.3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Observe that $\rho_{0}<E_{\text {in }}$. As $A_{c}>1$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\rho_{0} & <c^{\frac{1}{p-1}+1}\left(\frac{1}{C_{T}+\gamma}\right)^{\frac{p}{p-1}} \frac{1}{\tau_{c} T} \\
& <c\left(\frac{c}{E_{i n}}\right)^{\frac{1}{p-1}} \frac{E_{i n}^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}{T}\left(\frac{1}{C_{T}+\gamma}\right)^{\frac{p}{p-1}} \frac{1}{\tau_{c}} . \tag{5.3.8}
\end{align*}
$$

Because $C_{T}>1$ (and thus $1-4 C_{T}<0$ ), for $\gamma>0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{C_{T}+\gamma}-\frac{4 C_{T}}{\gamma}=\frac{\gamma-4 C_{T}\left(C_{T}+\gamma\right)}{\gamma\left(C_{T}+\gamma\right)}=\frac{\gamma\left(1-4 C_{T}\right)-4 C_{T}^{2}}{\gamma\left(C_{T}+\gamma\right)} \leq 0 \tag{5.3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

As a result, we have $\frac{1}{C_{T}+\gamma} \leq \frac{4 C_{T}}{\gamma}$. From (5.3.8) and the definition of $\tau_{c}$, for $0<c<$ $E_{i n}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{o}<c \frac{E_{i n}^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}{T}\left(\frac{4 C_{T}}{\gamma}\right)^{\frac{p}{p-1}} \frac{1}{\tau_{c}}<c \tau_{c} \frac{1}{\tau_{c}}=c<E_{i n} \tag{5.3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

We will return to the proof of Lemma 5.3.1 after proving the following propositions.
Proposition 5.3.2. For any $t>\tau_{c}$ and any $\rho \in\left[\rho_{0}, E_{i n}\right]$ we have,

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{t}(\rho)<F_{t}(\rho) \tag{5.3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $F_{t}$ is as given in (5.3.1).
Proof. Since $C<C_{T}=C T^{\frac{p-1}{p}}+1$ (as $T \geq 1$ ), it sufficies to show the inequality

$$
\left(C_{T}\right)\left(\rho+(\rho t T)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}+\rho^{2 / p}\right)<\left(C_{T}+\gamma\right)(\rho t T)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}
$$

which is equivalent to the inequality,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(C_{T}\right)\left(\rho+\rho^{2 / p}\right)<\gamma(\rho t T)^{\frac{p-1}{p}} . \tag{5.3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\rho>0$ we can divide both sides of the inequality (5.3.12) by $\rho^{\frac{p-1}{p}}$. Thus, we may prove (5.3.11) by showing,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(C_{T}\right)\left(\rho^{1 / p}+\rho^{\frac{3-p}{p}}\right)<\gamma(t T)^{\frac{p-1}{p}} \tag{5.3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Indeed, it is enough to show the stronger result (for $p \geq 3$ ),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(C_{T}\right)\left(E_{i n}^{1 / p}+\rho_{0}^{\frac{3-p}{p}}\right) \leq \frac{\gamma}{2}\left(\tau_{c} T\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}} \tag{5.3.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note, if $2 \leq p \leq 3$, then $\frac{3-p}{p}>0$ and (5.3.13) is satisfied simply by noting that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau_{c} \geq \frac{1}{T}\left(\frac{2 C_{T}}{\gamma}\left[E_{i n}^{1 / p}+E_{i n}^{\frac{3-p}{p}}\right]\right)^{\frac{p}{p-1}} \tag{5.3.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

implies, for $t \geq \tau_{c}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma(t T)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}>\frac{\gamma}{2}\left(\tau_{c} T\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}} \geq\left(C_{T}\right)\left(E_{i n}^{1 / p}+E_{i n}^{\frac{3-p}{p}}\right) \geq\left(C_{T}\right)\left(\rho^{1 / p}+\rho^{\frac{3-p}{p}}\right) \tag{5.3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

whenever $\rho_{0} \leq \rho \leq E_{i n}$.
To prove (5.3.14) we note that from the definition of $\tau_{c}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\frac{4 C_{T}}{\gamma}\right)^{\frac{p}{p-1}} \frac{E_{i n}^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}{T} \leq \tau_{c} \tag{5.3.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{T} E_{i n}^{1 / p} \leq \frac{\gamma}{4}\left(\tau_{c} T\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}, \tag{5.3.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

and also,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\frac{4 C_{T}}{\gamma}\right)^{\frac{p}{2}} \frac{A_{c}^{\frac{p-3}{2}}}{T}\left(\frac{C_{T}+\gamma}{c}\right)^{\frac{p(p-3)}{2(p-1)}} \leq \tau_{c} \tag{5.3.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\tau_{c} T\right)^{-2 / p} \leq \frac{\gamma}{4 C_{T}} A_{c}^{\frac{-(p-3)}{p}}\left(\frac{c}{C_{T}+\gamma}\right)^{\frac{-(3-p)}{(p-1)}} . \tag{5.3.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Recalling the definition of $\rho_{0}$, we have,

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{T} \rho_{0}^{\frac{3-p}{p}}=C_{T}\left(\frac{c}{C_{T}+\gamma}\right)^{\frac{3-p}{p-1}} A_{c}^{\frac{p-3}{p}}\left(\tau_{c} T\right)^{-2 / p}\left(\tau_{c} T\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}} \leq \frac{\gamma}{4}\left(\tau_{c} T\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}} \tag{5.3.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Combining the estimates of (5.3.18) and (5.3.21) provides the inequality of (5.3.14) and concludes the proof of Proposition 5.3.2.

Proposition 5.3.3. For $\tau_{c} \leq t \leq A_{c} \tau_{c}$ and $c \leq s \leq E_{i n}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{t}^{-1}(s)<G_{t}^{-1}(s) \tag{5.3.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Observe that since $F_{t}$ and $G_{t}$ are both continuous and increasing, then $F_{t}$ maps the interval $\left[\rho_{0}, E_{\text {in }}\right]$ onto $\left[F_{t}\left(\rho_{0}\right), F_{t}\left(E_{\text {in }}\right)\right]$ and $G_{t}$ maps $\left[\rho_{0}, E_{\text {in }}\right]$ onto $\left[G_{t}\left(\rho_{0}\right), G_{t}\left(E_{\text {in }}\right)\right]$. By Proposition 5.3.2, $\rho<G_{t}(\rho)<F_{t}(\rho)$ for $\rho_{0} \leq \rho \leq E_{\text {in }}$ and in particular, $G_{t}\left(\rho_{0}\right)<$
$F_{t}\left(\rho_{0}\right)$ and $G_{t}\left(E_{\text {in }}\right)<F_{t}\left(E_{\text {in }}\right)$. Furthermore, since $F_{t}\left(\rho_{0}\right)$ is increasing in $t$,

$$
\begin{align*}
F_{t}\left(\rho_{0}\right) & \leq F_{A_{c} \tau_{c}}\left(\rho_{0}\right)=\left(C_{T}+\gamma\right)\left(\rho_{0} A_{c} \tau_{c} T\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}} \\
& =\left(C_{T}+\gamma\right)\left(\left(\frac{c}{C_{T}+\gamma}\right)^{\frac{p}{p-1}} \frac{1}{A_{c} \tau_{c} T} A_{c} \tau_{c} T\right)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}=c, \tag{5.3.23}
\end{align*}
$$

for all $t \in\left[\tau_{c}, A_{c} \tau_{c}\right]$. Recalling the definition of $G_{t}$ in (5.2.12), it is clear that $G_{t}\left(E_{i n}\right)>$ $E_{i n}$. Hence, we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{t}\left(\rho_{0}\right)<F_{t}\left(\rho_{0}\right) \leq c<E_{\text {in }}<G_{t}\left(E_{\text {in }}\right)<F_{t}\left(E_{\text {in }}\right) . \tag{5.3.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[c, E_{i n}\right] \subset\left[G_{t}\left(\rho_{0}\right), G_{t}\left(E_{i n}\right)\right] \cap\left[F_{t}\left(\rho_{0}\right), F_{t}\left(E_{i n}\right)\right], \tag{5.3.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is to say that each $s$, with $c \leq s \leq E_{i n}$, is in the common range of $F_{t}$ and $G_{t}$. Now, for fixed $s \in\left[c, E_{i n}\right], s=G_{t}\left(\rho_{1}\right)=F_{t}\left(\rho_{2}\right)$ for some $\rho_{1}, \rho_{2} \in\left[\rho_{0}, E_{i n}\right]$. Since $G_{t}(\rho)<F_{t}(\rho)$, for all $\rho \in\left[\rho_{0}, E_{\text {in }}\right]$ and $F_{t}$ and $G_{t}$ are increasing, this implies that $\rho_{1}>\rho_{2}$. Thus $G_{t}^{-1}(s)=\rho_{1}>\rho_{2}=F_{t}^{-1}(s)$ and (5.3.22) is shown.

We conclude by showing that $S\left(A_{c} \tau_{c}\right)<c$. We can compare the solutions of the initial value problems:

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{d}{d t} S_{1}+G_{t}^{-1}\left(S_{1}\right)=0  \tag{5.3.26}\\
S_{1}\left(\tau_{c}\right)=S\left(\tau_{c}\right)
\end{array}\right.
$$

and

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{d \tilde{S}}{d t}+F_{t}^{-1}(\tilde{S})=0  \tag{5.3.27}\\
\tilde{S}\left(\tau_{c}\right)=E_{i n}
\end{array}\right.
$$

Notice, that $S(t)$, the unique solution to (5.3.3) is also the unique solution to the IVP (5.3.26). Furthermore, the solutions $S_{1}=S$ and $\tilde{S}$ are continuous and $\tilde{S}\left(\tau_{c}\right)=E_{i n} \geq S\left(\tau_{c}\right)$. By Proposition 5.3.3, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
S(t)<\tilde{S}(t) \quad \text { on } \quad\left(\tau_{c}, A_{c} \tau_{c}\right] \tag{5.3.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

so long as $S(t) \geq c$. This is true because whenever the solutions $S$ and $\tilde{S}$ coincide, the magnitude of the rate of change of $\tilde{S}(t)$, which is given by $F_{t}^{-1}(S(t))$ is strictly below the magnitude of the rate of change of $S(t)$, which is given by $G_{t}^{-1}(S(t))$.

Since $F_{t}(\rho)=\left(C_{T}+\gamma\right)(\rho t T)^{\frac{p-1}{p}}$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{t}^{-1}(s)=\frac{1}{t T}\left(\frac{s}{C_{T}+\gamma}\right)^{\frac{p}{p-1}}=\frac{k}{t} s^{\frac{p}{p-1}} \tag{5.3.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is then straightforward to verify that the solution to (5.3.27) is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{S}(t)=\left(\frac{1}{p-1}\left[k \ln \left(\frac{t}{\tau_{c}}\right)+\left(E_{i n}\right)^{\frac{1}{1-p}}(p-1)\right]\right)^{1-p} \tag{5.3.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $S(t)$ drops below $c$ at some time before $A_{c} \tau_{c}$, then we are done. Otherwise, we are
still guaranteed that $S(t)<\tilde{S}(t)$ and evaluation at $A_{c} \tau_{c}$ shows

$$
\begin{align*}
S\left(A_{c} \tau_{c}\right)<\tilde{S}\left(A_{c} \tau_{c}\right) & =\left(\frac{1}{p-1}\left[k \ln A_{c}+\left(E_{i n}\right)^{\frac{1}{1-p}}(p-1)\right]\right)^{1-p} \\
& =\left(\frac{1}{p-1}\left[\frac{p-1}{c^{1 /(p-1)}}-\frac{p-1}{E_{i n}^{1 /(p-1)}}+\frac{p-1}{E_{i n}^{1 /(p-1)}}\right]\right)^{1-p} \\
& =\left(\frac{1}{c^{1 /(p-1)}}\right)^{1-p} \\
& \leq c \tag{5.3.31}
\end{align*}
$$

This concludes the proof of Lemma 5.3.1.

### 5.4 Decay Rate

We now conclude the proof of Theorem 1.2 .5 by showing the rate of the decay of the energy $E(t)$. In addition to showing that $S(t)$ decreases to zero as $t$ increases to infinity, the proof of Lemma 5.3.1 also provides a time, $t_{c}=A_{c} \tau_{c}$, by which we can guarantee that the energy level is below $c$, for any $0<c<E_{i n}$. From this information we can find a decay rate for the solution $S$. So, for $0<c<E_{\text {in }}$ we are assured that $S\left(A_{c} \tau_{c}\right)<c$, where $\tau_{c}$ satisfies (5.3.6). Indeed, we can specifically choose

$$
\begin{align*}
\tau_{c} & =T+\frac{1}{T}\left(\frac{2 C_{T}}{\gamma}\left[E_{i n}^{1 / p}+E_{i n}^{\frac{3-p}{p}}\right]\right)^{\frac{p}{p-1}}+\left(\frac{4 C_{T}}{\gamma}\right)^{\frac{p}{p-1}} \frac{E_{i n}^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}{T} \\
& +\left(\frac{4 C_{T}}{\gamma}\right)^{\frac{p}{2}} \frac{A_{c}^{\frac{p-3}{2}}}{T}\left(\frac{1+\gamma}{c}\right)^{\frac{p(p-3)}{2(p-1)}} \\
& =B_{1}+B_{2} \exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{1 /(p-1)}}\right)^{\frac{p-3}{2}} c^{-\frac{p(p-3)}{2(p-2)}} \tag{5.4.1}
\end{align*}
$$

where $B_{1}=T+\frac{1}{T}\left(\frac{2 C_{T}}{\gamma}\left[E_{i n}^{1 / p}+E_{i n}^{\frac{3-p}{p}}\right]\right)^{\frac{p}{p-1}}+\left(\frac{4 C_{T}}{\gamma}\right)^{\frac{p}{p-1}} \frac{E_{i n}^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}{T}$ and $B_{2}=\frac{1}{T}\left(\frac{4 C_{T}}{\gamma}\right)^{\frac{p}{2}} \exp \left(\frac{(p-3)(1-p)}{2 k E_{i n}^{1 /(p-1)}}\right)$. Then,

$$
\begin{align*}
A_{c} \tau_{c} & =\frac{\exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{1 /(p-1)}}\right)}{\exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k E_{i n}^{1 /(p-1)}}\right)}\left(B_{1}+B_{2} \exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{1 /(p-1)}}\right)^{\frac{p-3}{2}} c^{-\frac{p(p-3)}{2(p-2)}}\right) \\
& =B_{3} \exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{1 /(p-1)}}\right)+B_{4} \exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{1 /(p-1)}}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{2}} c^{-\frac{p(p-3)}{2(p-2)}} . \tag{5.4.2}
\end{align*}
$$

We estimate $A_{c} \tau_{c}$ in the following two cases.
Case of $2 \leq p \leq 3$ : Here, $\frac{p(3-p)}{2(p-1)} \geq 0$ and hence, for all $c$ with $E_{i n}>c>0$ we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
c^{\frac{p(3-p)}{2(p-1)}} \leq E_{i n}^{\frac{p(3-p)}{2(p-1)}} \tag{5.4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore, $\frac{p-1}{2} \leq 1$, implying that $\frac{p-1}{k c^{\frac{1}{p-1}}} \geq \frac{(p-1)^{2}}{2 k c^{\frac{p}{p-1}}}$ and thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}\right) \geq \exp \left(\frac{(p-1)^{2}}{2 k c^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}\right) \tag{5.4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{align*}
t_{c} & \leq B_{3} \exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}\right)+B_{4} \exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}\right) E_{i n}^{\frac{p(3-p)}{2(p-1)}} \\
& \leq B_{5} \exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}\right) \leq B_{5} \exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}\right)^{p-1} \tag{5.4.5}
\end{align*}
$$

where $B_{5}=B_{3}+B_{4} E_{i n}^{\frac{p(3-p)}{2(p-1)}}$. That is, time $t_{c}=B_{5} \exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}\right)$ guarantees that $S\left(t_{c}\right) \leq c$.
Case of $p>3$ : Here, $p-3>0$ and $p-1>2$, so $\frac{p-1}{2}>1$ and $\frac{p(p-3)}{2(p-1)}>0$. Now, for
sufficiently small $c>0$ we know that, for some constant $C^{\prime}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
c^{-\frac{p(p-3)}{2(p-2)}} \leq C^{\prime} B_{4} \exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{1 /(p-1)}}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{2}} \tag{5.4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

and also

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{1 /(p-1)}}\right) \leq \exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{1 /(p-1)}}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{2}} \tag{5.4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, for all sufficiently small $c>0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{c} \leq B_{3} \exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}\right)+B_{4} \exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}\right)^{\frac{p-1}{2}} c^{\frac{p(3-p)}{2(p-1)}} \leq B_{6} \exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}\right)^{p-1} \tag{5.4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $B_{6}=B_{3}+C^{\prime} B_{4}$. By choosing $B=\max \left\{B_{5}, B_{6}\right\}$, we have by (5.4.5) and (5.4.8) that for all $p \geq 2$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{c} \leq B \exp \left(\frac{p-1}{k c^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}\right)^{p-1}=B \exp \left(\frac{(p-1)^{2}}{k c^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}\right) \tag{5.4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, let

$$
\begin{equation*}
t>B \exp \left(\frac{(p-1)^{2}}{k E_{i n}^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}\right) \tag{5.4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

and choose $c=c(t)$ to be

$$
\begin{equation*}
c=\left(\frac{(p-1)^{2}}{k \ln (t / B)}\right)^{p-1} \tag{5.4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that $c \leq E_{\text {in }}$ is ensured by (5.4.10). Then,

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{c}=t_{c(t)}=B \exp \left(\frac{(p-1)^{2}}{k\left[\left(\frac{(p-1)^{2}}{k \ln (t / B)}\right)^{p-1}\right]^{\frac{1}{p-1}}}\right)=t \tag{5.4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
S(t)=S\left(t_{c}\right) \leq c=c(t)=\left(\frac{(p-1)^{2}}{k \ln (t / B)}\right)^{p-1} \tag{5.4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, recalling (5.2.34), we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
E(t) \leq S\left(\frac{t}{T}-1\right) \leq\left(\frac{(p-1)^{2}}{k \ln \left(\frac{t-T}{T B}\right)}\right)^{p-1} \tag{5.4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Bibliography

[1] Keith Agre and M. A. Rammaha. Systems of nonlinear wave equations with damping and source terms. Differential Integral Equations, 19(11):1235-1270, 2006.
[2] Keith Agre and Mohammad A. Rammaha. Global solutions to boundary value problems for a nonlinear wave equation in high space dimensions. Differential Integral Equations, 14(11):1315-1331, 2001.
[3] Claudianor O. Alves, Marcelo M. Cavalcanti, Valeria N. Domingos Cavalcanti, Mohammad A. Rammaha, and Daniel Toundykov. On existence, uniform decay rates and blow up for solutions of systems of nonlinear wave equations with damping and source terms. Discrete Contin. Dyn. Syst. Ser. S, 2(3):583-608, 2009.
[4] Đẳng Điñh Áng and A. Pham Ngoc Dinh. Mixed problem for some semilinear wave equation with a nonhomogeneous condition. Nonlinear Anal., 12(6):581592, 1988.
[5] Viorel Barbu. Nonlinear semigroups and differential equations in Banach spaces. Editura Academiei Republicii Socialiste România, Bucharest, 1976.
[6] Viorel Barbu. Analysis and control of nonlinear infinite-dimensional systems, volume 190 of Mathematics in Science and Engineering. Academic Press Inc., Boston, MA, 1993.
[7] Viorel Barbu, Irena Lasiecka, and Mohammad A. Rammaha. On nonlinear wave equations with degenerate damping and source terms. Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., $357(7): 2571-2611$ (electronic), 2005.
[8] Lorena Bociu. Local and global wellposedness of weak solutions for the wave equation with nonlinear boundary and interior sources of supercritical exponents and damping. Nonlinear Anal., 71(12):e560-e575, 2009.
[9] Lorena Bociu and Irena Lasiecka. Uniqueness of weak solutions for the semilinear wave equations with supercritical boundary/interior sources and damping. Discrete Contin. Dyn. Syst., 22(4):835-860, 2008.
[10] Lorena Bociu and Irena Lasiecka. Local Hadamard well-posedness for nonlinear wave equations with supercritical sources and damping. J. Differential Equations, 249(3):654-683, 2010.
[11] Lorena Bociu, Mohammad A. Rammaha, and Daniel Toundykov. On a wave equation with supercritical interior and boundary sources and damping terms. Mathematische Nachrichten, to appear.
[12] Igor Chueshov and Irena Lasiecka. Long-time behavior of second order evolution equations with nonlinear damping. Mem. Amer. Math. Soc., 195(912):viii+183, 2008.
[13] E. DiBenedetto. $C^{1+\alpha}$ local regularity of weak solutions of degenerate elliptic equations. Nonlinear Anal., 7(8):827-850, 1983.
[14] Vladimir Georgiev and Grozdena Todorova. Existence of a solution of the wave equation with nonlinear damping and source terms. J. Differential Equations, 109(2):295-308, 1994.
[15] Robert T. Glassey. Blow-up theorems for nonlinear wave equations. Math. Z., 132:183-203, 1973.
[16] Alain Haraux. Nonlinear evolution equations-global behavior of solutions, volume 841 of Lecture Notes in Mathematics. Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1981.
[17] Walter Kelley and Allan Peterson. The Theory of Differential Equations Classical and Quantitative. Pearson Education, Inc., 2004.
[18] V. Lakshmikantham and S. Leela. Differential and integral inequalities: Theory and applications. Vol. I: Ordinary differential equations. Academic Press, New York, 1969. Mathematics in Science and Engineering, Vol. 55-I.
[19] Howard A. Levine. Instability and nonexistence of global solutions to nonlinear wave equations of the form $P u_{t t}=-A u+\mathcal{F}(u)$. Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 192:1-21, 1974.
[20] Howard A. Levine and James Serrin. Global nonexistence theorems for quasilinear evolution equations with dissipation. Arch. Rational Mech. Anal., 137(4):341361, 1997.
[21] Howard A. Levine and Grozdena Todorova. Blow up of solutions of the Cauchy problem for a wave equation with nonlinear damping and source terms and positive initial energy. Proc. Amer. Math. Soc., 129(3):793-805 (electronic), 2001.
[22] L. E. Payne and D. H. Sattinger. Saddle points and instability of nonlinear hyperbolic equations. Israel J. Math., 22(3-4):273-303, 1975.
[23] David R. Pitts and Mohammad A. Rammaha. Global existence and nonexistence theorems for nonlinear wave equations. Indiana Univ. Math. J., 51(6):1479-1509, 2002.
[24] Petronela Radu. Weak solutions to the initial boundary value problem for a semilinear wave equation with damping and source terms. Appl. Math. (Warsaw), $35(3): 355-378,2008$.
[25] Mohammad A. Rammaha and Theresa A. Strei. Global existence and nonexistence for nonlinear wave equations with damping and source terms. Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 354(9):3621-3637 (electronic), 2002.
[26] Sawanya Sakuntasathien. Global well-posedness for systems of nonlinear wave equations. PhD thesis, University of Nebraska, May 2008.
[27] R. E. Showalter. Monotone operators in Banach space and nonlinear partial differential equations, volume 49 of Mathematical Surveys and Monographs. American Mathematical Society, Providence, RI, 1997.
[28] Enzo Vitillaro. Some new results on global nonexistence and blow-up for evolution problems with positive initial energy. Rend. Istit. Mat. Univ. Trieste, 31(suppl. 2):245-275, 2000. Workshop on Blow-up and Global Existence of Solutions for Parabolic and Hyperbolic Problems (Trieste, 1999).
[29] Enzo Vitillaro. Global existence for the wave equation with nonlinear boundary damping and source terms. J. Differential Equations, 186(1):259-298, 2002.
[30] Enzo Vitillaro. A potential well theory for the wave equation with nonlinear source and boundary damping terms. Glasg. Math. J., 44(3):375-395, 2002.
[31] G. F. Webb. Existence and asymptotic behavior for a strongly damped nonlinear wave equation. Canad. J. Math., 32(3):631-643, 1980.
[32] Kôsaku Yosida. Functional analysis. Springer-Verlag, Berlin, fifth edition, 1978. Grundlehren der Mathematischen Wissenschaften, Band 123.


[^0]:    Wilstein, Zahava, "Global Well-Posedness for a Nonlinear Wave Equation with p-Laplacian Damping" (2011). Dissertations, Theses, and Student Research Papers in Mathematics. 24.
    http://digitalcommons.unl.edu/mathstudent/24

[^1]:    ${ }^{1}$ For the functional $J$ defined in (1.1.4), the Gâteaux derivative (1.1.7) is linear in $v$ and also bounded (hence continuous) whenever $u \in \mathrm{H}_{0}^{1}(\Omega) \cap L^{r+1}(\Omega)$. In this case, $J^{\prime}(u)=(\nabla u, \nabla v)-$ $\left(|u|^{r-1} u, v\right)$ is also the Frechét dervivative.

[^2]:    ${ }^{2}$ The space of weakly continuous operators from $[0, T]$ into a Banach space $X, C_{w}([0, T] ; X)$, is the set of operators $y:[0, T] \rightarrow X$ such that the map $t \mapsto\langle z, y(t)\rangle$ is continuous on $[0, T]$ for every $z \in X^{\prime}$.

[^3]:    ${ }^{1}$ We can choose a small $T$, since the argument can reiterated to cover the whole local existence interval.

